I Am The Firstborn

Precept Eight

I am THE FIRSTBORN
I am THE FIRST TO RISE FROM THE DEAD

JESUS

urlink
PRINT & MEDIA

I Am The Firstborn

Copyright © 2025 by Jesus. All rights reserved.

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any way by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording or otherwise without the prior permission of the author except as provided by USA copyright law.

The opinions expressed by the author are not necessarily those of URLink Print and Media.

1603 Capitol Ave., Suite 310 Cheyenne, Wyoming USA 82001
1-888-980-6523 | admin@urlinkpublishing.com

URLink Print and Media is committed to excellence in the publishing industry.

Book design copyright © 2025 by URLink Print and Media. All rights reserved.

Published in the United States of America

Library of Congress Control Number: XXXXXXXXXX
ISBN XXX-X-XXXXX-XXX-X (Paperback)
ISBN XXX-X-XXXXX-XXX-X (Hardback)
ISBN XXX-X-XXXXX-XXX-X (Digital)

22.05.25

INTRODUCTION

Hook In Your Jaw

We will be talking about how our Father put a spiritual hook in my jaw to get me go to the Philippines.

Becoming The Firstborn

We will be talking about how I have become the firstborn. How I am the first to raise from the dead. And how I am now living in the Garden of Eden

Living in Satan's kingdom, or world

We will be looking at how we are living in Satan's world now. How this is hell and that we all walk through spiritual flames. And once again, we will be revealing the son of perdition

Fearing God, The Father

A look at what it means to fear God the Father and how important it is to have a genuine fear of Him

We are going to the Philippines

We are going to be talking about my trip to the Philippines. Lessons the Father had me go through while I was there

Going through life with one another

This chapter is talk about what it is like to go through life with one another, but from a spiritual perspective

Going through life with God the Father

We will be talking about what it is like going through life with God the Father and how many have chosen not to go through life with God the Father

Going through life with Jesus

This chapter will also be reflecting on the trip to the Philippines, but will also show how many do not want to go through the pain and suffering with Jesus. And true love is willing to go through life with all, no matter the circumstances, including with God the Father and Jesus

The King James Bible, It's not a history book.

We will be showing something that I realized the very first time I read the Bible, but didn't understand. The entire bible is about our lives and not about the past. it is a book of lessons. It is our schoolbook.

Committing Adultery

In this chapter we will be learing how our Father married me to a woman in the Philippines and how I would up committing adultery on her even though I haven't had sexual intercourse with her or anyone else. We will also be showing how the world commits adultery on the Father the same way.

The Great Burning

We will be showing how the Father caused a great burning in my foot and this brought to my attention of on long chapter that speaks

of many health problems that people have. And how these health problems are ways that we deal with burning in hell now.

The conclusion is that it is teamwork.

We will be discussing how it is the teamwork starting with the Father and how it takes the entire world for you to own anything and everything. It is truly a worldwide teamwork. We all need each other.

PRECEPT EIGHT

Here we go again! we go again! As stated in previous books, or precepts, this is a continuation of the previous books. There will be many things in this book that were talked about in the last book, but at the same time, this precept will take you the reader deeper into the scriptures in which will give you a better understanding of our Father.

Once again, this book will be provocative and will most likely upset many. But as stated in previous books, I am not here to water things down. I am not here to tell anyone that our perfect Father has changed in anyway. I am here to speak the truth and to give the world an understanding of our Father, who He is, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing.

This is a journey that started for me back in 2011, and through the years I have been learning all that I have been taught a little at a time. This is why this book is the eighth precept.

> Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that

> they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: (Isaiah 28:9-15)

I have posted a little more than I usually do when I am showing how precept must be upon precept. Let me explain, the more precepts or books that we write, I find myself wondering if anyone will really try to read all the precepts. I know firsthand, when we wrote the first book, there were a certain number of people that started to read it, but couldn't finish it. Now that several years have passed, and many more books have been written, I sometimes wonder if they will pick up a later book with a much deeper understanding of our Father and find themselves a bit confused or lost.

Yes, each book does give a much deeper understanding of our Father, who He is, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. But at the same time, each precept does not paint the whole picture, if you will.

It would be like trying to get to know somebody by only talking to them on the phone for about an hour or so once a week, without meeting this person. For example, let us think of you meeting someone online or something of the sort. You and this person talk on the phone for about an hour once a week. You do this for a year or so, can you say that you will know everything about this person when you finally meet in a year?

There is no way that either of you two would hardly know anything about one another. So, let us think of this in a different way. Let us think of these precepts as schoolbooks. We are going to say that the first book, or precept, Father forgive us, we haven't been listening as the book you get when you start the first grade. And then we will say

that the seventh precept or book, For the powers of heaven shall be shaken, is somewhere close to the senior year.

If we do not take the time to go through all the grades to make it to the senior year, how can we expect to pass the senior year? If I have a child that just started kindergarten, I cannot expect that this child will be able to go halfway through the year, and then all the sudden be ready for the third grade. If this child goes all the way through the fourth grade, I will not expect him or her to be ready for high school.

I guess what I am trying to say is that if you are not willing to read all of the precepts, there will be no way that you will ever understand our Father in the way that I do. There will be no way that you will agree with Him and you will continue to walk contrary to Him and His ways.

> And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcases upon the carcases of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you. (Leviticus 26:27-30)

That is what He is talking about when He is telling us that there will be some, that precept will be upon precept, line upon line, here a little and there a little. that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. Another way to be looking at all these books, or precepts that we have written are somewhat like your books you get for each class while going through school as a child. Remember we are to become as little children if we want to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

> And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto

> you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. (Matthew 18:2-5)

The first book that we published back in April of 2015, is something like the book we wrote for the kindergarten class. This too, is the milk that we need to be weaned from if we want to be taught by our Father as we read in or heard in the first part of the scriptures we showed in the book of Isaih 28.

Each precept is like you moving onto the next class or actually skipping a few but by the time you get to the seventh precept, For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken, you will be in the sophomore or senior class. I say this because we showed you all that after all these years of schooling that I had been going through with our Father, I am now living in the Garden of Eden. With that in mind, I am bordering on calling this book my senior year, or maybe even my freshmen year of college. And as you know, you cannot take someone that has not even gone to kindergarten, and expect them to know how to do the school work of a senior or college student.

One final thing I want to mention on the purpose for the precepts. This makes the eighth book or precept that we have written since 2015. There is absolutely no way that I can repeat or cover all the things that have been covered in previous precepts. Yes, we do often cover things talked about in previous books, but we cannot repeat everything. It has been a journey getting to know all that I know now, and I am sure my education will continue to grow while I am yet in the flesh, but reading each precept will more or less put you on the same journey and hopefully you can come to understand our Father as well as I do.

INTRODUCTION

Welcome to the eighth book or precept. Once again, we are in a time of history to share some more knowledge that our Father has been bringing to my attention. There were a lot of new concepts brought up in the last book, Precept Seven, For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken, that I am feeling need to be better explained.

To start this out, I want to make sure that I give all the glory to our Father for all of the knowledge that we bring to you all in these books. I know with all certainty that I would not be able to bring any of this knowledge without our patient, long suffering, and loving Father teaching me.

I want to remind everybody at this time that the hour is now upon us that if you are going to worship God, you must worship Him in Spirit.

> But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

And at the same time, I want to remind everyone that God is working a works that no man will believe even though I have been showing this.

> Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you. (Habakkuk 1:5)

> Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you. (Acts 13:41)

We are going to be covering a lot of which we have covered in previous precepts or book in this book, but at the same time we showing even more in depth understanding of our Father, who He is, what He is doing and why and why He is doing what He is doing.

We will be talking about some things that were brought up in the last precept but yet, were not covered in detail. Or maybe I should say that I feel I need to connect the dots a little better because my knowledge has grown since then. Like the kings of the Old Testament having dominion over our bodies.

We also mentioned that I am now living in the Garden of Eden, but we did not show how this makes me the first born. In previous precepts or books, we showed that our Father is making me into the firstborn, but it was not until a couple of months after the book was published, that our Father got it through my thick skull, that I am now the firstborn, because I am back in the Garden of Eden.

We also revealed that the serpent that beguiled Eve in the beginning of the Bible is our imagination and that the serpent, the devil, or Satan dwells within every person on the planet. In previous books, we have been showing bits and pieces in each book but I feel we need to do a chapter that is dedicated to only talking about how our imagination, or the son of perdition sits in the temple of God showing himself to be god. Remember we are the temple of God.

> Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? (1 Corinthians 3:16)

We are going to be talking about a lot in this precept, but we are mainly wanting everyone to focus on the concept of knowing that the Bible was written for our learning.

> For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15:4)

In the last precept, we showed you all how we need to hear the engrafted word if we truly want understand the Bible, our Father, what He is doing, and most importantly, why He is doing what He is doing.

> Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

In previous books, I have told you all that the King James Version of the Bible is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives. But now I am wanting to focus on how it is not a book of the past but rather a book about our lives. As we showed you all in the last book, the scriptures are the heavens that are going to be shaken.

> For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

In previous precepts, we have shown you all that everybody has their own laws, rules, judgements, ordinances, testimonies, and commandments. Everybody is part of the one Son of God, it does not matter what race, color, nationalism, size, or shape someone is. It does not matter what someone has done, doing, or will do, Christ is in all and is all.

> Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all. (Colossians 3:11)

And by some chance you think that somebody is totally evil by your standards, remember that God the Father causes the sun to rise on them just as He does you.

> Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect. (Matthew 5:43-48)

And we need to remember that there are some people here that do things to others, that we might consider to be evil or mean, but if our Father is commanding them to do so, then they are doing right by our Father.

> Then they said to Jeremiah, The Lord be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shall send thee to us. Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the Lord our God, to whom we send thee; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the Lord our God. (Jeremiah 42:5-6)

Remember God is a Spirit, and it is that spirit of Him that dwells within all of us. That is what make all of us Jesus. Then we need to remember that Jesus is also called Justice.

> And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellowworkers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me. (Colossians 4:11)

This is part of that engrafted word. We can see that Jesus is called Justus. I said he is called Justice, but we can see it is spelled differently in the King James Version of the Bible. So, say both out loud and you will hear that they both sound the same.

Remember vengeance belongs to God, not us.

> To me belongeth vengeance and recompence; their foot shall slide in due time: for the day of their calamity is at hand, and the things that shall come upon them make haste. (Deuteronomy 32:35)

> Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good. (Romans 12:19-21)

It is that breath that He breathed into us in the very beginning, or that light that He created on the first day of creation, as explained in the last precept, that takes vengeance on those that do wrong by Him, not man.

Now we need to talk about how all scripture is inspired by God. When I say this, I strongly stress that this is the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. Any Bible written and or published after

the King James Version of the Bible was written by man or Satan so that man could get it to say what they want it to say instead of just listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2 Timothy 3:16-17))

Now I realize that we are told that scripture is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, and correction. This does not mean changing what it reads. It does not mean to add certain things to it or take words from it. Remember we are to live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:1-4)

When we listen here, we can hear the tempter say to change these stones into bread. Now when you listen or read the King James Version of the Bible, are not the scriptures something like stones. We can see through them, but they block you from understanding what you are hearing. And bread, as taught in previous books, is knowledge. Since the King James Version of the Bible was published in 1611, many different versions of the Bible have come out and being changed from what the King James Version of the Bible is saying. The scriptures are knowledge. As shown in the last book, the scriptures

are bread. I showed you all how to eat unleavened bread every day of the year. Remember we are not to add or diminish from the Bible.

> Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

We are not to go to the left or the right from what God commands.

> Ye shall observe to do therefore as the Lord your God hath commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. Ye shall walk in all the ways which the Lord your God hath commanded you, that ye may live, and that it may be well with you, and that ye may prolong your days in the land which ye shall possess. (Deuteronomy 5:32-33)

As shown in the last book or precept, that is one of the reasons that I am now living in the Garden of Eden. I refuse to seek our Father and all that He is about anywhere but the King James Version of the Bible. And I stand firm on that because as shown in several past books, or precepts, I was called to the King James Version of the Bible in 2011. Exactly 400 years after the King James Version of the Bible was published.

Now let us talk about what we are told in the second book of Peter.

> Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:20-21)

The scriptures are not of any private interpretation, they were not written by the will of man. This means the the holy men spake as

they were moved by the Holy Ghost. They did not witness what they were writing about, they were being told what to write. I too, have experienced similar things. One that I am going to show right here. In the third book or precept three, on the ninth page of the introduction. But with the new publication with the precept page added, it is now on the tenth page of the third book. I wrote this.

I will say you really need to let go of your pride. Humble yourself, let down your guard and realize that this is a time in which is going to be very devastating for the world.

If you want to check this out in the third book, Precept Three, Jesus Christ In The Flesh, it is on page 10. If you want to check this out in the fourth book, Precept Four, Jesus Is Here, it is on page 15. This book was originally published in September of 2019. We all know how the Covid-19 ravished through the world in March of 2020. He didn't tell me what exactly was going to happen, He just told me that a devastating time was coming. So, I tell the world this in 2019, and in March of 2020, things happened just the way He said they would. And today, people are still feeling pains from this.

With all that being said, let us bring to your attention of what this book is going to focus on. We are now showing you that the entire King James Version of the Bible, is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives. Yes, this has been stated in all previous books, or precepts, but this time we are showing the entire Bible is about our lives and not about events that happened in the past. How could it be? As we showed you in the last book or precept, we were all here on the first day of creation.

So, just like when you go to school, you get your book or books for each year. You must follow through those books if you want to pass the class. And if you do not understand something in the book, you go back through to follow the instructions. You don't go and get a different version of the same book and expect to figure the original book out. And the special thing about the King James Version of the Bible is that there is only One source that can allow you to see, hear, and understand what it is truly saying. That is why we are told to seek Him with all of our heart, soul, mind and strength.

> If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. (Deuteronomy 30:10)

> And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. (Deuteronomy 30:1-3)

> And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. (Jeremiah 29:13)

Now for one of my favorite spots we can hear the same thing. But this time pay attention to how He is telling us that if we would turn back to Him even in the latter days. He is not saying to those of the past in the latter days, He is drawing our attention to those living during the latter days.

> But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice; (For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither

> destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:29:31)

How could He say this in the way that He does if it wasn't talking to us before 1611, when the King James Version of Bible was published. I say before 1611, because the book of the Bible had to be written before it was published. Just like the time we showed you all that it is going to be a devastating time for the whole world, then six or seven months later, Covid-19 ravished through the world.

As stated in previous books or precepts, I have told you all that I took and take the Bible personally. I showed you all how it hit a nerve when I heard the scriptures say that I will give your children to be raised by others. I felt it was talking about me when the scriptures said I will give you failing eyes. I wear glasses since the so-called car accident in 1986, which is what caused me to be in a coma for three days and three nights. As explained in previous books and again toward the end of this book, that is how I was in the belly of the earth for three days and nights. Coma being next to dead. And then there is scriptures telling us that He gives us cleanness of teeth.

I didn't understand nearly as well as I do now, but the first time I read the Bible, I felt it was talking about my life in particular. Now I know why, because it is, but not just mine, all of our lives. And because it was the Holy Ghost that moved the holy men so that they wrote what they wrote, it is the Father that actually wrote the King James Version of the Bible. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. Yes this is 1 John 5:7. And now you know why we are told several times, that we are to not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:4)

> All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:1-3)

This is why I take it personally. The Father called me to the Bible in 2011. I wouldn't even talk to people about the Bible because I didn't understand it. Now we are writing the eighth book or precept, giving the world a deeper understanding of the entire Bible. It was just after my 41st birthday in 2011 when He called me the Bible. And as explained in previous precepts, He is the One that caused everything in my first 40 years of life. Manna is knowledge and not an physical food. I know this because in my first 40 years, I celebrated birthdays and man-made holidays just as the rest of the world does. All those 40 years were done so that I would humble myself when I read it for the first time. So that I would hear, see, feel, and realize that He was talking to me.

And as shown in the last book, we really need to be thinking about how our Father told these holy men to write what they wrote as if it was past tense. And being who the Father is, it is past tense to Him, but He is actually telling us of our future from the first day of creation.

On top of us talking and teaching more in-depth knowledge of our Father, we are going to learning about a lot of things we have not covered in many of the books. I mean we have talked about how the

Bible is all about love, but this time, we are going to take you through how our Father has taught me what love really is, what love really feels like, what it is like to experience true love and much more about love. But this love is not just about loving your spouse, it expands to loving God the Father, it expands to show how we love Jesus, it expands to how we love our children, it expands to how we love everybody, it expands to how to love even the people we work with or around, including your boss. And I am not just telling you all of this, I have been experiencing all of these lessons first hand, and hopefully as you read this precept, you too, will start experiencing this love yourself. This book will be showing how the entire King James Version of the Bible is all about love, and this love is pure, honest, and unstoppable.

Here is the biggest thing this book does. We are told that Jesus is the mediator of the New Testament.

> And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. (Hebrews 9:15)

This book mediates the New Testament and what it is really saying. But know this, I could not be the mediator if our Father had not put me through all of this so that I could experience the New Testament. I am not sure if I can say mediator of just the New Testament, because I mediate all that the Father has to say in both testaments.

HOOK IN YOUR JAW

Let me say this right out of the gate, this was and is the absolute biggest, hardest, and scariest lesson that I have ever been through but at the same time, it seems that it is going to be leading to something that I have been wanting for a very long time. I am saying at the same time because this lesson is so huge that it will be the topic most of the chapters in this book. And there is absolutely no way the lesson will be finished by the time this book is published. So, I guess I can say that this is the first time that I have published a book in the midst of a lesson, but it is so valuable, I just know I have to share this with the world.

This lesson started about two years ago, but I can't remember the exact time. This is the later part of September, so I guess this started to get scary about six or seven weeks ago. Now there is one of the companies that I have been working with for about 2 years or so, that has been helping me to try and promote the books. I have been working with one particular woman there by the name of Lydia. Since we have been working together, we have had some long conversations. And some of these conversations got to be somewhat personal. And I guess it is fair to say it was because of how I am being rejected and have been hating it so much. I would often talk about how I was not afraid to die and that I actually welcome death because I was so tired of being rejected.

Lydia and I would talk about what I was going through, but about 6 months into our business relationship, things started to get a little bit more than just that. She started sharing some of the problems that she was having in her life. I guess I need to back up just a bit, the first

time I got a call from her, I really enjoyed hearing her voice. She had and has this soft, gentle, and welcoming voice that I couldn't help but to relax somewhat when I would listen to her talk. I think that is one of the reasons I would call her on days that I really didn't have anything to talk about, I just wanted to hear her voice.

So, the more we talked, the more personal the conversations would get to be. Yes, I would talk about how I was being rejected. I would talk about how there were many times I just wanted to give up on everything. I would talk about my children, my grandchildren, places where our Father had sent me, and the things that had happened when He sent me on these trips. We would talk about the cross on my forehead, and when she had first seen the picture of the cross, she would go and see if she had one also. She thought and thinks this cross on my forehead is amazing. And she would tell me how she wanted one also. I show you all this cross in the fourth book, Jesus is here.

Then she would start talking about things going on in her life. How she is a single mother. How she made that choice because she was in an abusive relationship when she got pregnant. She would tell me about how she was afraid of her family disrespecting her because she was not with a man, but yet pregnant, and was determined to raise this child by herself. She would even talk about how sometimes she would also just want to give up because of the things that had happened to her in her lifetime. Obviously, she would never give up, but I could relate to what she was saying. She would talk about places she wanted to see. It was like we were becoming best friends.

She would tell me about how determined she is about raising her daughter by herself. She told me about how she didn't and doesn't have many friends, and how she likes to just keep to herself. I mean of course, with her daughter but how she didn't want other people around. In all the conversations we had, I kind of felt like she was talking about me. Because that is exactly how I am. I mean my children are all grown, but since I was a teenager, I did and do not like to hang around other people. I like to keep to myself. So, I could truly relate to what she was telling me.

Then a few months ago, I got a call from her and she asked me if I had ever thought about not talking to her anymore. I guess this is when I say maybe I took it for granite that she would always be there to talk to. The first thing I said is that it is the Father's will, not giving it much thought. Then she said that she was quitting in a week.

Okay, this got the wheels in my mind, metaphorically speaking, because I did not want to lose contact with her. Sense she started calling me, I found myself feeling somewhat more relaxed when I spoke with her. For the longest time, I thought it was because I love the sound of her voice. Her voice is so soft, smooth, and relaxing. I didn't know where she was from, but her accent just floored me. I just loved to listen to her talk. But when I gave it some more thought, I realized I enjoyed talking to her because we had a lot in common. We both shared a lot of the same mental, emotional, and spiritual pain. That was a connection that I did not want to lose.

In one or two of these conversations we had over the time we had been talking, she had told me that they record all phone conversations, and that they are not allowed to get personally involved with any authors. So, during the almost two years that we had been talking, I was intentionally dropping little hints that she could get a hold of me anytime. If she needed someone to talk to, if she needed financial help, I didn't care, I just wanted her to call. At this time, I thought she lived in Cheyenne WY. That is where the number showed to be from on my cell phone. I even asked her a couple times when we were going to meet. Because I drive through Cheyenne a lot. I wanted to meet the woman that had this beautiful voice that I enjoyed listening to so much. And I guess I should say it was just more than a voice by this time. We had built some kind of friendship even though we had never met in person.

When our friendship first started, she would try to say things like have a good whatever holiday. I would tell her that I do nothing for any holiday. She would call me and ask if she could wish me a happy birthday and such. And as I have expressed in all of the books, I do not do any of this. But now I must make a confession. Over some time, she did ask me for my birthday. I do not remember how she found

out the month, but she knew what month my birthday was in. And as it happens, her birthday is also in the same month. So, she wanted to know about my birthday. And after a little talking, I told her that I would tell her the day of my birthday, but under no circumstances was she to email or call me to wish me a happy birthday. I will not mention hers or my birthdates, but I will say that she also found it to be amazing that our birthdays are only 16 days apart.

Now in several of the previous books, or precepts, I have been telling you all that I am ready to die. I am ready for the end of the world. I am tired of doing this. Amongst other things, but I have stated that I do not look forward to it, but I am sick of being rejected. During these phone calls between Lydia and I, I would express my desire to just die. She would call these times dark times, and there were many. I would get so fed up with things, I would email her and tell her to just stop promoting the books. I would just tell the Father that He could just find someone else because I was done. This happened several times. Lydia would call me every time. She would tell me that I could do that if I really wanted to but then she would also talk me through whatever I was going through. She would tell me that whatever I was going through would be okay in just a day or two or something. She would always talk to me through whatever I was going through.

We must back up a little before getting back on the topic at hand. Now I must also explain something that really caught my interest in her. Through the time that we had gotten to know one another, I had strongly emphasized the importance of how we should not celebrate any man-made holidays, and or birthdays. This is something that I stopped right after reading the King James Version of the Bible the first time, as explained in previous books or precepts. One of my biggest complaints to the Father was and is how nobody ever listens to anything I say about what I can and have shown in previous books.

They would tell me that they believe in me and what I do, but yet, everybody had and has some excuse as to why they will not even try to do what I have done for years. I refuse to eat anything unclean, I refuse to celebrate holidays, or birthdays. In Fact, there is one person that

even tried telling me that she won't quit celebrating holidays because of how I made her feel when I quit. So, I guess it is my fault that she won't listen to my Father. Let me just say this, my Father comes first, then others. And I do not care how that makes anyone feel. Own your own faults and do not put them on others.

But here is the catch, Lydia, skipped last Easter and it wasn't because of anything other than our conversations that we had. I remember this distinctively; she had told me before the holiday that she was considering not celebrating Easter because of some of the things that I had said. I honestly didn't believe she would because she has a young daughter, and I know that the celebration of these days is fun for children. But she called after the holiday and told me that this was the first time, she had skipped any holiday. This caught my attention because this is the first and only person that has believed in some of what I say, and she is the first person to prove it by her works. As I have shown you all in previous books, our works are not physical, but spiritual.

But there is more to it than that. When her daughter's birthday was coming up, Lydia told her that they had another event that they were going to do in a couple of months. I didn't find out that she did this until sometime after she did this. But the way she explained it to me is that she did this so that her daughter would not be thinking of as she was celebrating her birthday. No, that is no where close to how I am about holidays and birthdays, but at least one person is hearing and listening to some of what I am saying.

Now when I start putting all this together, and just think about how she would call me all the time and talk me through my dark times. How she would talk to me about some of the personal things going on in her life. How she would just call to check on me to see how I was doing. How she actually skipped a holiday, and a birthday because of some of the things I would talk about. How she would tell me that I am the chosen one, and that I am the anointed one. How she would tell me that she believed in me. She would do this when we spoke on the phone and in emails.

She did and does all of this for one reason and one reason only, she believes in me. No, she is not where I am at spiritually, but she has shown that she truly does believe in me. And not just with her lips. This is what I have wanted for so many years. There is finally one person that believes in me. Yes, there will be a lot more to come, but she is the first. And to me, that is worth more than the weight of the earth in gold.

We need to remember now that I am an example for the world. When others start to truly believe in me, they will start to form the same works that I have instead of thinking that I came here some time ago and changed our perfect Father.

> For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: (1 Peter 2:21)

I am guessing at the timing, but I am thinking it might have been around a year into our friendship. I said, I have to tell you this, I do not know what you look like, I have never seen a picture of you, but I think you are a very beautiful woman. I go on to tell her that you put up with me, you talk me through what you call dark times, you always listen. To me, that makes you a very beautiful woman, regardless of what you look like.

Getting back on track now. Now she is quitting, and I guess maybe I started to panic a little. I just knew that I did not want to stop talking to her. I got bold, I said to her, you're quitting so I am going to just say this to you instead of dropping the little hints that I have since I have been talking to you. I told her it didn't matter if I say this on a recorded line anymore if she was quitting. I mean, it was like what are they going to do, fire you? I told her to take my email home, take my phone number home, and just please reach out to me if you need anything. I will help you with whatever you need.

Then she called me back in a couple days from work, to tell me that she wasn't quitting, she said that she was going to have a stone removed from her gallbladder. Now my first reaction was that this isn't

that big of a surgery. My mom, when she was alive as my mom, dealt with kidney problems all her life. If memory serves me correctly, one of her kidneys was dysfunctional because of stones. And she lived to be 73. But then Lydia started to cry, she told me that she did not want to die, and it almost felt like my heart just dropped. This just broke my heart. Now this has become a major surgery in my mind.

Obviously, I try to comfort her and reassure her that she will not die. And she did calm down. Then over the next few days, it seemed she would call me more and more. All these calls were taking place at her work. Then two days before her leave, she called me three times. Now I need to state that all of this took place over 2- or 3-months' time. But on the day before her leave, she called me to tell me that she was taking leave a day early because her pain was so intense that it was really hard for her to sit there at her desk all day.

Now during one of these phone calls, she started to cry hard, telling me that she did not want to die, she wanted to live. She goes on to tell me that she didn't want anyone else to raise her daughter. She was even calling out the people that she thought would be raising her daughter if she died. Then she starts telling me all kinds of things going on in her life. I guess I need to say more than normal. Because a lot of our conversation had to do with other things than promoting the books. We got to know one another quite well through these conversations. Then she states that she really thinks she is getting ready to die because of all the stuff she was telling me. She said that was one of the reasons she thought she was going to die. She started telling me a lot of secrets, I mean things so personal, I will not mention them here. She asked me, isn't this what people do right before they die? I mean she was crying, and I could tell she was really scared of this. I did my best to reassure her that she wasn't going to die, but I also told her to reach out to me if she wanted to. I mean now that I knew she wasn't quitting, I needed to hold back my desire to have her get in touch with me outside of work.

I was just so sad for her, I knew she had never been put under anesthesia before, and the thought of someone putting her under just scared the living tar out of her. I told her all about my mom. I told her

I have been under anesthesia a few times. I just wanted to reassure her that she would be hurting but she will not be dying. When I think about this when this conversation was going on, I might have told her to take my phone number and email home so that she could get in touch with me if she needed someone to talk to. Now in some of these conversations, she got to know that I hate money. Remember, the love of money is the root of all evil.

> For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1 Timothy 6::10)

Yes, money is a tool to survive, but having a bunch of it does not interest me that much. I would rather use the money I have to help others. She knew that, and I knew she knew that. So, I told her that if you need any help with medical bills, reach out to me because you know I will help you if you need it.

Now I cannot remember exactly when but sometime within the last two weeks before she went on leave, she asked me what I thought about Filipinos. I told her they are servants and or vessels of God, just as we are. She goes on to tell me that she is in the Philippines. Oh, really is my reply, as it did take me by surprise. I told her that I thought maybe she was from Mexico. I told her that I could tell that you could not speak English that well and that there are a lot of people here from there so, I just assumed that is where you were from. But this excited me for some reason. I had never met anyone from the Philippines, so this intrigued me. I do not know how others would feel about having a friendship with someone that was not honest about where they are from, but this really excited me. I was just delighted to know that I was talking to someone so far away. And now it made sense as to why she never talked about maybe meeting as I told her I wanted to do.

It wasn't very long after she left for her leave, I received an email from someone named Mary, titled I will accept your help, David. I opened it to see who this was, and much to my surprise it was from

Lydia. She proceeded to tell me that they are not allowed to give their real names at work. It has something to do with not giving any personal information to their clients. Once again, I do not know if this would bother other people. You know, building a friendship with someone that wasn't honest about where they live or their name, but I didn't bat an eye over this. It did not and does not bother me any. Personally, it made me feel kind of special. This woman that has been talking to me through these dark times, sharing her personal details with me, reached out to me against the rules from her work.

I don't think I would have cared about what she would have told me. I just knew that there is some part of her that truly believes in me. I guess this made me believe in her. Her work would not allow her to give her real name, nor are they allowed to share personal details with their clients. So, it wasn't Lydia that was giving a false name, or that let me think she was somewhere other than where she was. It was her job

Now I need to say this right now, I refuse to give any amounts or even hint toward an amount of help I will be giving her if and when it actually happens. Always remember, when giving alms, do not let thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth.

> Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly. (Matthew 6:1-4))

Other people are your left and right hands, do not tell anyone because as soon as you do, you lose any reward that you might have

had coming from the Father. Because you have chosen to seek the appraisal of man and not of Him. Remember everybody is part of the body of Christ.

> For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. (1 Corinthians 12:12-21)

I could write a chapter on this topic alone because each section of the Bible that I show, makes me think of another area of the Bible. But we have broken this down in the other precepts, so we are just going to get back on topic.

I was just so relieved that Mary had reached out to me. I was still in contact with the woman that I had spent the last two years building a relationship with. But there was more to it than just wanting my financial help, she needed her friend as much as I needed to hear from her. She was still scared, she felt like she had to go through this surgery alone. Yea, her mom was coming to watch her daughter while the surgery was going on, but she is a single parent and there

was nobody there to hold her hand while she was going to be going through this. Obviously, her daughter cannot go to the hospital with her. I told Mary that I will be with you through every step of this. I told her that I cannot be there physically, but I will be there in mind and spirit.

We had sent several emails back in forth about her concerns, and I would try to comfort her the best I could via email. Then one day I received one of these emails, but this one was a little different. It contained an attachment of some sort. So, I opened it and my jaw hit the floor. I couldn't believe what I was looking at. I seen this beautiful woman with her child on her chest, saying good morning. I mean I had told this woman that I thought she is beautiful just because of how she is with me, but I had no idea that she is truly beautiful even on the outside. To me, it would not have mattered what she looked like because I could already see and feel her beautiful heart by her works. I mean she was just waking up, and she hadn't fixed her hair or nothing, but I saw nothing but pure beauty. She was still lying in bed with her daughter on her chest. She was clothed but she didn't have her hair fixed, nor was she wearing any makeup. Here is this video of this beautiful woman holding her beloved child saying good morning to me with this soft, gentle, and welcoming voice that I enjoyed so much.

Now I could only see her face and her daughter, but it was the face that our Father created. Not some face buried behind makeup. As I have shared with you all in previous books, I think everybody should just let the person that God created, shine. I think a woman is more beautiful when she doesn't put on a mask to make herself look pretty. And on top of that, I had already told her that I thought she was beautiful but now I could see genuine beauty on the inside, and on the outside. And with her holding her daughter on her chest, I found to be just adorable, but at the same time, showing me how much her daughter means to her. The first video that she sent to me was of her holding this precious little girl. This immediately told me that this little girl is the biggest part of her life and that she will be a humongous part of our friendship from here on out.

Now I want to show you within the scriptures that it is the hidden man of the heart in which makes a woman's beauty shine. And keep in mind that this is talking about wives, and she is not my wife by any means. I am just reflecting on how women are to let it be the hidden man of the heart, nothing more.

> Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. (1 Peter 3:1-4)

As I have shown you all, her works show that beautiful hidden man of the heart. And she had just recently woke up in this video, so she wasn't wearing any makeup, nor was her hair brushed, nor was she wearing any jewelry. And she was saying good morning in the video with her soft, gentle, and welcoming voice. At that very time I was thinking that I am watching a video of a very beautiful woman that our Father created. And she just sent it to me. Don't get me wrong, I knew that I cannot be with anyone, but doggonit I sure can see pure beauty when I see it, and I was looking right at her.

Through our emails that we had been sending back in forth, we both communicated with one another that we were going to get Skype so that we could talk on the phone while she was away from work. It was a few days before the surgery when I received a phone call from a number that I had never seen before. The number showed to be from California, so I instantly figured it was some telemarketing scheme or something, but I wasn't sure, so I answered it. It was Mary, she

had just got her Skype set up and was giving me a quick call to make sure it was working.

As we were talking, Mary said that she was lying in her bed getting ready to go wake her daughter up so that they could go and see if the ship was at the docks yet. But then she said something that kind of caught my attention, but not with too much concern. Now I need to mention something here, the time difference between us is kind of strange. She is about 14 hours ahead of me. I say about because I drive a truck, so it does vary because I am always in different time zones in the US. It was midnight where she was, and ten in the morning where I was.

Then she goes on to tell me that she is getting ready to go wake her daughter up so they can go to the docks and see if the ship has come in yet. She went on to tell me that her mom was coming in on a ship from a different island in the Philippines. And that they were running behind because of the typhoon that was taking place and causing big waves that were slowing the ship down.

As we were talking, she said that she kind of felt like she was talking to her boyfriend at midnight lying in her bed. And even though I know I cannot be with anyone, I was thinking within myself, I wish. Yes, I am in the flesh, and I do remember what it was like when I used to be with women, and if I was going to be with another, I know that she would be the one I want to be with.

Then on the day of the surgery, she sent me a short video of her walking to the hospital. It is labeled feeling positive. The video started with her tilting her head with her long dark hair draping over her shoulders, smiling and saying that she was going to the hospital. She just said that she is feeling positive about this now, and then she said let's go. I literally almost felt like I was right there with her. And the expressions on her face while she was talking was just amazing. To this day, I still picture this video in my mind and find myself trying to say let's go just the way she did. I mean even the way her face moves when she talks is very beautiful. And then with that accent, I am in total awe. I cannot believe what I am starting to feel. And knowing that I helped her become that confident just amazes me as well.

Then when she gets checked in, she sends me more videos of her room and the food that her mama prepared for her while she was going to be in the hospital. In that video particularly, the doctor had just walked in when she was showing me the food. She mentioned that the doctor had just walked in, and as she was shutting the video off, she tilted her head a little and looked toward the doctor. The video stopped at a moment that had her tilting her head, looking towards the doctor. The caption was and is just so beautiful. If I didn't know better, I could easily think that this was a picture that was posed and taken by a professional. I mean she just looks so darn beautiful.

One of those videos was labeled prayers. She was asking me if she was in my prayers. Oh yes, definitely, you're in all my prayers is what I was thinking when she asked me this. Now I am not sure if this was the first video, I sent her, but I sent one back to her saying that she is in my prayers more than you can realize. By this time, almost everything I was talking to the Father about, was her.

Obviously, I cannot and will not share what was said in every email, video, or phone call, but we were starting to talk a lot. And the more videos she sent me, the more I felt like I was actually right there by her side. Then she sent me one just before the surgery. She got freaked out a little bit when she saw them getting things ready to take her back to have the surgery done. She sent me a video of her crying because she couldn't find her mama. Oh, it broke my heart. In fact, my eyes are watering right now as I am reflecting back to watching this video. I didn't feel like I was there now. I just wanted to hold her and reassure that it is going to be okay. But I couldn't because I am 8,000 miles away. This just tore me up.

Of course, I tell her I wish I was there to hold your hand through this. But then after the surgery, she sent me a quick video labeled successful. Yes, she was out of it because this was shortly after the surgery took place. She was lying on her side with her eyes barely open. She was telling me she is feeling very groggy and how they tried to get her to stand, but she would get low on breath and want to vomit. But then she said thank you so much, David. And I realized

that I was truly there to help her get through this, even though I was not physically there.

Now I am hooked, I cannot stop thinking of her and ways to help her through her recovery. She is just sending me video after video. It was like I was right there in the hospital with her while she was recovering. She was sending me pictures of some of the things she was doing during her recovery. I started to find myself to be falling head over heals for this woman and I couldn't understand why. I am not allowed to honor anyone, nor am I allowed to respect anyone, but I cannot get this woman off my mind. She is literally all I can think about.

I started to check my email every 10-15 minutes just to see if she has sent me anything. I started to feel like I was lost if I wasn't hearing from her. I mean in every video, every email, every text, and every phone call, I just feel so connected to her. When I said she was in all my prayers, I was not exaggerating, she was all I would talk to the Father about. I could not figure out what was going on. Why am I growing to be so attached to this woman. And at the same time, it seems like she is growing attached to me as well.

This is where I want to mention waking up a couple of different mornings. One morning I woke up from a dream that Mary and I were talking about something. I am not sure if we were talking in person, or on the phone. I remember I was talking with her though, and I woke up smiling from ear to ear. Remember, God gives us our instructions as we sleep, in a dream.

> For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (Job 33:14-18)

Then on a different morning, I woke up with this country song in my mind. I hadn't heard it in years. All I could remember is something like boss says you're going to get fired. I could picture how it sounded, but I could not remember the words. Now I mention this because in the last book, I told you all that I was going to listen to country a lot more, because of less cussing. Well, I only made it for about a month after the last book was published, before going back to rock and roll. The very day I woke up with this song on my mind, I tuned into country and can hardly stand rock at all now. The name of the song, Beautiful Mess by Diamond Rio. This song sounds exactly what I feel that I am in. Mary is all I think about. I am constantly driving by places I need to turn into. I have actually slowed the truck down because I am a lot more relaxed now as I drive, and I am tired of having to turn around.

Now we are going to back up many years so that I can tell you all about something. This was back in 2019. It was around the time the second book was published but before the third was published. There is less than a year between the publication of those two books. In fact, this happened with the same servant and or vessel of God that our Father used to say this to me, David, hear what the Spirit says to you, make thy name known, make thy name known, get the book done, or you're going to have to start over from the beginning.

What we are talking about happened a long time before she said that. I met this woman at a truck stop in West Memphis Arkansas, before the second book was published. She had come to my truck asking me if I wanted company. Obviously, I tell her no, but proceed to talk to her about our Father. I wound up giving her some books and we exchanged phone numbers so that we could talk about our Father.

It turned out that she was trying to set up a beauty salon. To make a long story short, I will just say that I agreed to help her do this. I will not give any amounts, but one day I stopped in West Memphis. We met in person, and she wanted to take me to her place to show me what we had accomplished with getting the salon set up. While we were there, to this day, I do not know why, but she flashed me. I thought about it for a minute and thought maybe this is what I am

supposed to do. Yea, she was very attractive, but not even 30 seconds after that thought crossed my mind, the Father put a dead stop to it. It was that day, that very moment, when I knew that there was no way that I would ever be with a woman again. And I was fine with just that. I am here to learn the Bible and share this knowledge, not to be messing around. That is when I made up my mind that I will never be with anyone again, and I am okay with that.

Now let us get back to Mary. Every video she sent me, every time she called me, and every email she sent me. She was doing and saying everything perfectly. I mean everything I have ever admired in different women, was a quality that Mary had. The way she looked into the camera when she would send me videos, it would just make my heart melt. I would watch these videos over and over. All the time telling myself I cannot do this, I cannot do this, I am falling in love with this woman, and I cannot do this. Oh my gosh, what is going on Father?

Now I remember this was a Wednesday, but I started to feel like I needed to tell Mary what was happening to me. But I didn't want to because this is going to freak her out. I mean, how is she going to understand what is going on with me if I cannot understand what is going on with me, myself? So, I hesitated because I did not want to tell her. It was starting to be heavy on my conscience that I have to be honest with her about what is going on. I was feeling like I was lying to her if I didn't tell her. But man, I cannot tell her, she will not understand, she will stop talking to me.

I might not have the exact timing right here, but I am thinking it was before, or right around the same time that I started to feel that I needed to be honest, that the Father told me that I am to give her my heart. At this point, I didn't think much of it, she is a fellow servant and or vessel of God that needed my full support. I am glad to do it, so this is what I was thinking of as me giving her my heart. I can do that with ease.

And it was around this same time that I had awoken from a dream of her talking in person, or maybe it was on Skype, video call, but I was talking to her. I don't remember what we were talking about, but

I do distinctively remember me waking up with a big smile on my face. I sent her a video of it, describing this to her. I felt it was only fair because since we started talking, she had shared many of her dreams with me. And I was in her dreams that she shared.

Then Friday comes along, and she sends me another video. She is still in the hospital, and it is still attached to a successful line of emails. Oh, I can't wait to see it. I open it to hear her explain some emotions that she felt when she awoke. Then she mentions how she was worried about her daughter seeing mommy again. Then she said that yea, her daughter will see her again, but without a gallbladder. I was a little confused because I thought she said she was just having a stone removed from her gallbladder. Okay, I could have misunderstood, not that big of a deal. But the surgery was definitely more intense than I had originally thought it would be.

I watched this video over and over and just listened to her talk. Yes, I love to listen to her talk but then it hit me like a ton of bricks, I wasn't watching this video over and over to hear her talk, but rather to see what she did in the very beginning and in the middle of the video. Right at the very beginning, she looks right into the camera and for a split second, before saying a word, she wrinkles her nose. When she did this, she snarled her upper lip a little. It was natural and it looked like she was doing this just to get my attention. And it did, oh boy, did it ever.

Now for me, this is one of the absolute, most beautiful things any woman can do. It has to be natural, but when I woman does this, it just does something inside of me that drives me crazy. I cannot explain it, but I love it. Well, I lost it, I started yelling at the Father. What are you doing to me, you know I cannot be with anyone but you're taunting me with this woman that I am finding to be perfect, and I mean in every aspect, she is perfect. Everything I have ever wanted in a woman is right there in front of me. I tell Him that I feel like you're dangling her in front of me saying, see what you cannot have. I was so mad; I could not believe what was going on.

I am fine with never having sex again, I am fine with never being emotionally attached to anyone because I have made and vow to

God the Father to do what He needs me to do and not man. And I have no desire to fulfill the desires of the flesh. Especially if it means destroying everything that the Father and I have done over the past several years.

After a few minutes of me yelling at the Father, the words just blotted out of my mouth, David, I know what you like. At first, this just made me even more mad. Because now I am thinking that is exactly what is going on. You're the One inside of her causing her to act, do, and say everything perfectly, just to remind me of what I cannot have.

Then He tells me to start thinking about the conversations that I have had with Mary. He reminds me of how she was talking about how her mom had to come over on a ship from a different island. How they were having trouble because of the big waves. He reminds me of how Mary had mentioned all the fish people eat over there. Then He tells me to think about a lot of the things that Jesus did. You know, walking on water, traveling by ship to different areas, and calming the waves. Then He ask me of what I told everyone in the last book we wrote. Oh, I told everyone that everything you read about Jesus and thought he did, is going to happen with me because as we have been showing, Jesus was not here in the past, but is here now because the end of the world is approaching.

Then He proceeds to tell me that Mary is my lure, and because I know the scriptures so well and do listen to them, it instantly took my mind to this.

> In the tenth year, in the tenth month, in the twelfth day of the month, the word of the Lord came unto me, saying,Son of man, set thy face against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and prophesy against him, and against all Egypt: Speak, and say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, Pharaoh king of Egypt, the great dragon that lieth in the midst of his rivers, which hath said, My river is mine own, and I have made it for myself. But I will put hooks in thy jaws,

> and I will cause the fish of thy rivers to stick unto thy scales, and I will bring thee up out of the midst of thy rivers, and all the fish of thy rivers shall stick unto thy scales. (Ezekiel 26:1-4)

Okay let us think about this for a minute. I did a quick Google search on what people think this means. It turns out that people think that this is some metaphor for Pharoah and that it happened many years ago. Now I have shown in previous books or precepts, that we are counted as fish in the Bible. In the fourth book, I showed you all how this world is covered with a spiritual flood. And that flood's name is Egypt. Now I have been showing you all that the Bible is about our lives and not a book of the past. The scriptures were written for learning, not that we could learn about what did happen in the past, but rather what will happen in our lives.

There it is, Mary is my lure. What do lures have on them? They have hooks. She is the lure to get me over to the Philippines. Within an hour or so after the Father telling me she is my lure, I started to understand that I am going to be moving to the Philippines. Now I start to get a little excited because all of these emotions I am feeling for Mary, are not me going against the bond I have with the Father, but they are supposed to happen. Now I can understand a little better why I am falling in love with this woman. But at the same time, I know that sex is marriage, so I am still a little hazy at understanding this because I am not to become married with anyone. There is no marriage in the resurrection, and I have resurrected from the dead.

Well now it is Friday evening, and with me starting to understand, I decide it is time to tell Mary what is going on with me. After all, if I don't, I am not being honest with her, and how could I not be honest with someone that has done so much for me. Now I must tell you all this, when the Father first started telling me to be honest on Wednesday, I started to tell her that there was a long email coming.

So, when I started this email on Friday, I labeled it, "don't be scared". In my mind, I was going to make it make sense to her. But I wasn't thinking about how I know so much more about the scriptures

than her. I wasn't thinking about how I know and understand the Father. So, I proceeded to tell her that she is my lure and that I am going to be moving over there eventually. I tell her that I am falling head over heels for her. Not because I want to be sexual, or romantic with her but so that I will eventually move over there. I go through the same process with her, as the Father did me to get me to understand that I am moving over there.

But as I am writing this email, something is gnawing at my stomach. I start thinking that she is going to think I am nuts or something. Me telling her that I am falling head over heals for her is going to make her think that I want more than just a friendship or something. But at the same time, I must be honest. So, I sent the email thinking all of this, but I had to be honest.

Now I knew she was still in recovery at the hospital, so I didn't expect her to read this long email right away. But when I awoke the next morning and I did not see an email from her, I started to think that I scared her away. I did not want to lose contact with this woman that made me feel so good. But then I received an email labeled, "I am not scared". She goes on to explain that she is not scared. This brings an instant big relief.

Now we go back to our videos and emails back and forth for a couple of days. And I swear I think I am falling into a deeper love that I have ever experienced before. I guess maybe some would say she is like a drug for me, and she is very addictive. I mean I am hooked and there is no way this hook is getting out of my jaw. I love it and I am not letting go.

Now at the same time, the Father had been giving more understanding of what is going on. So, I decided to write her another email to share what the Father has been telling me. But as I am writing this, my stomach started to gnaw at me again. I know that I have to tell her that my feelings for her are growing stronger. But at the same time, it is making more sense to me not thinking about how she doesn't understand the Bible as I do. I was telling her that this is not about sex, but in the back of my mind, I was sure that is what she is going to think it is about.

I remember I didn't receive anything from her before I started driving that day. And the longer it took to receive something from her, the more my mind just started telling me that I scared her away. All of the sudden, the words just blurted out of my mouth, I didn't do all of this for nothing. Yes, this gives me a little confidence that everything is going to be just fine, but still it was gnawing at me.

I must admit, I am still getting use to our Father talking to me in my own voice. As we showed you all in the last book, we are One, and we have these conversations all the time now. When He is speaking, the tone of my voice lowers a little and the words are straight to the point. So that was Him telling me that He didn't do all this for nothing. Now I am getting scared because I still hadn't heard from her. Okay I will admit it, I am 54 years old, and I started to bawl my eyes out. I was crying to the Father asking Him not to do this to me. I remember it very well. I was driving in Montana at the time. I need to let you all know, I can do just about anything with my phone hands free by using my headset while I drive. I even told the Father, if I am your son, then have her get in touch with me. I was so scared. It didn't take 5 minutes and I heard an email come through. I immediately checked it and it was from her labeled, "I am not scared"' I immediately switched my stereo to Bluetooth and opened the email. I couldn't hear her, but I could see her sitting up in her hospital bed. She was shaking her head no with her long dark hair draping over her shoulders.

As I am crying from relief that she got in touch with me, I started to freak out because I could not hear what she was saying. I started to ask myself if she was nodding her head no because she didn't want to hear from me anymore, what is going on, why can't I hear you. After messing with the stereo for a minute or two, I got the sound working. Oh, what a relief, I could hear her soft, gentle, and welcoming voice saying I am not scared as she gently was nodding her head as to say no.

I was driving up a mountain when I was able to hear this video, but I just knew that I had to find a safe place to pull over so that I could respond to her response. So, when I got to the top of the mountain, there was like this wide spot on the interstate to check

your brakes before going down the mountain. I pulled over, cleaned up my face a bit because I had just been crying, and started to record a message. Well, I guess cleaning up my face didn't do much good because as I was making this quick video, I choked up again. I was just so happy that I didn't scare her away. I told her that these were tears of joy that she got a hold of me. I was just so happy to hear from her.

But this rollercoaster of emotions is not over yet. We go through a few days of talking back and forth via email and videos. But at the same time, our Father is working with me and now I am thinking I can explain all of this in a way that she can really understand. Then one night as I am taking my boots off, the words "this is true love" blurted out of my mouth. I did not know what this meant for sure and didn't give it too much thought. Then she gets released from the hospital and even sends me a picture of her being wheeled out in a wheelchair.

Then I decide that I am going to send another long email, but I call this one, "It all makes sense". I am feeling confident about this one, I am not thinking this one will scare her. But as soon as I got stopped, and picked my laptop up, the words blurted out of my mouth, "you got to tell her you love her". Now as I told you all in the 6th book or precept, when you have a thought and then your eyes are directed to see a sequence of numbers like 111, 333, 777, or 137, or any of those numbers in a sequence, there is a good chance you are being told something by our Father.

Well as it happens, right at the same time those words blotted out of my mouth, I looked at the time on my tablet, and it was 1:11 am. I was turning on my hotspot so that I would have an internet connection. When I first heard this, I thought no big deal, I have already been telling her that I am falling head over heels for her. I have told her that I cannot stop thinking about her and much more. Then as I started writing the email, I started to think of what she might think about me telling her that I love her.

It was sometime during all of this that the Father told me that He still has to reel me in. Now I have already explained how we are counted as fish. I have already shown how the earth is covered

in a spiritual flood, but what does this mean He has to reel me in. Remember I knew that I have to move to the Philippines, but I didn't and don't know when I am going to. But when He said this, I pictured someone catching a sword fish. Just what I have seen on TV. But I also seen that these fish can put up quite a fight and take a while to reel in.

I mean, she has told me about one author that wanted her to come to the US, marry him, stay married for 3 years and then they could get divorced so that she could have a green card and live in the US. I have seen stuff like this on TV but never imagined that I would know someone that this was an opportunity for them. But she has her morals, and she had told me how that is something she would never do. And I am completely on board with that. I agree with her 100%.

She has told me that she is determined to raise her daughter on her own. She does not want a man in her life. She has completed college even though it seemed the odds were stacked against her. The way I understand her is that she is a very independent woman with high morals, self willed, and very motivated to prove to herself and others that are close to her that she can and will do this on her own. This woman has it going on, if there is such a thing as being better than perfect, it is her. I mean, oh my gosh she is just like me. We both are self-willed, we are both determined to do what we set out to do, and there is nobody getting in the way. We both have boundaries that nobody is getting through.

On her last day at work before she took a leave of absence, on one of those three phone calls, she asked again how I could make the sacrifice of not being with a woman for so long. She said she couldn't understand how any guy could do this because men are sexual beast. And as I told her, when I got baptized with the Holy Ghost back in 2016, David died, and I started working for the Father and the Father only. Then I proceed to tell I couldn't be with a woman because I would never find a woman that would be willing to give up all holidays, and birthdays. And there is absolutely no way that I am going to start celebrating them again. Our Father never commanded it, so I will not do it. I told her that there is no woman that would understand why refuse to spend money on myself, but would rather

use this money to help others. And as I told her, I come to terms with that years ago, and it does not bother me. I am never alone, the Father is always with me. We have different purposes in life but we both have the same logic of morals and boundaries.

I am not exactly sure when this happened, but He did tell me that we are going through this together and that we are experiencing all real-life events together. At first, I thought this meant that I am giving her moral support through what she is going through, and in return she is sending me all these videos and emails which is just blowing my world up. I mean I am having the best time of my life with what we are doing. Even my daughter would comment on how happy I am. She even told me once on the phone that I sounded like a teenage girl falling in love.

But before this email, while she was at home in recovery, she sent me a video of her five-year-old daughter. It was the first morning after getting released from the hospital. She was showing me that her mom and her daughter had slept on the floor so that nobody would bump her wounds while they slept. And I thought it was adorable, her daughter came over to her mommy, started to climb up on her lap to give her a hug. Mary said no, no, mommies wounds, remember. Her daughter stopped, looked at her mom for a few seconds, then put her head down on Mary's lap for a few seconds. Then stood back up, stumbled around before gently falling back on the pillows and blankets to go back to sleep.

I mention this because I want to point out the love that I see and hear in this video by the daughters works. When her daughter started to climb up on Mary's lap, she was trying to say I missed you mommy, and I am glad your home. Then when Mary asked her to not climb up, her daughter looked into her eyes with compassion and without saying a word, you could tell that she understood that mommy was hurting. Then by her laying her head on mommy's lap, I could hear her daughter saying mommy, I love you, I understand why I can't climb on you, because you're hurting, but I must show you that I love you very much. Then she plumped back down on the makeshift bed. To

me, I thought that it was such a valuable moment, and so precious, that I still can remember that video vividly.

But before that happened, Mary had called me one day, and as we were talking, she put her daughter on the phone, her daughter proceeded to tell me that she learned how to be content today, Philippians 4:11. She said it so fast and loud, I couldn't understand what she said. So, Mary had her say it again, oh she said it so loud and fast again and I could almost understand what she was saying. But remember Mary is just now teaching her English. But she was so proud of this, and I can still hear her in my mind saying this.

> Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. (Philippians 4:11)

They say that a way to a man's heart is a good home cooked meal, well, I say the way to my heart is a 5-year-old little girl, quoting Bible scriptures to me. It was at that very moment that her daughter wrapped me around her little finger. She stole my heart right then and there. Now check this out.

> And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. (Deuteronomy 6:6-7)

We are to be teaching our children from the time they wake, till they go to bed, the ways of God and not man. And Mary is doing this very thing. My own daughter does not do this with her children. So yes, this makes me feel very close to the both of them.

Now I must share this with you because this was weird at first. It was a day or two after she got home from the hospital, Mary called me. She started talking about the no fatty food diet she was on

because of them removing her gallbladder. Oh, let me mention that she did send me a video of the stone that was in her gallbladder, and it looked to be the size of a golf ball. She was complaining because she was being forced to eat a lot of vegetable soup and such. She had her mom fry up some fish and take something from it to try and reduce the fat from it, but it made her tummy upset, so she said she is just going to have to stick to the vegetable soup. At the time I didn't think much about it because I was thinking that this is normal after a surgery.

I laugh about this now, but later that evening, I reached into my refrigerator to grab some turkey hotdogs. And I was going to have some potato chips with them. The refrigerator door was still open, and I had the hotdogs in my left hand just outside the door. Then I heard this voice inside my head, saying "what are you doing, she can't have fatty foods. I froze, I asked myself, what did I just hear. I sat there for a good 45 seconds just thinking about what I had just heard, I didn't move an inch.

Then I eventually put the hot dogs back in the fridge, closed the door and sat up and started arguing with myself. What is it going to hurt her if I eat these hot dogs? How is she going to even know. It is not going to upset her tummy if I eat these hot dogs. I did this for 2 or 3 minutes and then I heard this voice again say, you're going through this diet with her. He told me that I had asked for her pain. Let me explain this. Shortly after the surgery, she sent me a photo of her belly with three bandages on it. This is how they took her gallbladder. Well, I would put my finger on the bandage, asking the Father to give me her pain because I didn't have a little one to take care of. Then the Father told me that He couldn't give me her pain, but that I could go through this diet with her.

I thought about it fro a minute or two, grinned, and said I can do that. I could see how this would help her, and I wanted to help anyway I could. I looked around the truck and all I had was fatty foods. I had chili and such, but it was beef chili, so it would be considered a fatty food. I went into the truck stop where I was at to see if they had any vegetable soup. They didn't so I did a Google search to see what

people could eat after having a gallbladder removed. I seen what she was talking about but there was no such food here. I seen that raw vegetables was not good but I knew it wasn't a fatty food. So, not having any choice other than a garden salad or fatty food, I chose a salad.

The very next day I went to a Walmart and picked me up several cans of vegetable soup. Now when Mary had told me about this diet, she had said that she could eat bread. Well, I eat sourdough bread so I was pretty sure that I could eat it. I have been eating that since before I lost all that weight back in 2022 as explained in previous books.

I had already told Mary that I was going through this diet with her. I mean I knew she wanted other food, so I thought it would bring some comfort knowing that she wasn't going through this alone. And it was really making me feel good doing this. My first two bowls of soup, I would fix butter bread to go with it. I said the first two nights because that is all the longer, I got by with it. The third day, I went to grab the butter and heard this voice tell me to check and see if butter is considered a fatty food. Needless to say, yes, it is. Then I thought a thin layer of butter won't hurt so I reached in the fridge to grab the butter and I heard, "you can't do that". It was like, uh-oh, I got caught. I laughed about it and put the butter back in the fridge. I am still laughing about it.

So, after a week, Mary called me to tell me that we are allowed to have a little meat this week. I mean this was great, I could tell that she was enjoying me going through this with her. It felt and feels so good. But I have noticed a change in myself since we started this diet. My pants are looser, my gut doesn't stick out as much as it used to. I am thinking I like this diet. I liked it so much that I went through my truck and threw all the fatty foods away. I got me a lot more different styles of soups and I am having a blast eating differently. I even told Mary that I don't want to go back to eating fatty foods. I thought I was eating healthy before, but I have been wanting to lose another 10 pounds since I got back into the truck in 2022. And if I haven't lost that much yet, I am really close to it in just a few weeks' time.

Now back on topic. But now I had to send her an email that I thought would make a lot more sense, but I had to tell her that I love her. I tried to explain that this love is not a sexual love in any way. But the more I wrote, the more it bothered me. I started crying like a little baby. It was just like I could hear her saying, "this crazy old man thinks he is going to get inside my pants". I could hear her saying "he thinks I am going to come over there and take care of him" It took me 4 and a half hours to write that email. And by the time I was done, saying I love you Mary, I had already pretty much given up. I just knew I wasn't going to hear from her again.

It was on this very night after finishing the email, that I had got a direct commandment from our Father not to take her photo off of my phone. Yes, I took a still, screenshot of a couple of videos to put on my home screen. After finishing the email, I was going to take them off because I was sure that I scared her away, but just as I went to take them off, I was told not to. And those pictures are still on my phone to this day. I find myself looking at her picture several times a day.

Now she is home from the hospital, she is not on all the medications from the surgery, and she can think more clearly. What is she going to think about this email. And it did take a couple of days before I heard from her again. During this time, I was cussing and yelling at the Father. You told me to give her my heart, you told me that this is true love, you told me to write these emails. You told me that you didn't do all this for nothing. Why are you doing this to me, you caused me to fall into love with this woman just so that she would never talk to me again. I was even saying things like you are the author of confusion because this makes no sense at all to me. Why would you to this to me?

Then after a couple of days went by, I did receive an email from Mary. And it said exactly what I thought it would say. She was thinking I wanted to make this romantic or sexual. She explained that she did not want that. As I am reading, I am saying out loud, I don't either. She said that it took so long to figure out how to respond because she really thought that I wanted this go further than just good friends. Oh, I had to figure out something, some way or another to

make sure she could know that this love that I am feeling for her has nothing to with sex or romance. I mean common, not only does this cross her boundaries, but mine also. And for me to make a woman think that this is what I want, no way could I let this be.

The very next day as I am driving, our Father tells me how to explain it again to her, and this time, she will understand. He starts telling me to remember how I used to love to go my Uncle Bruce's and Aunt Maries when I was a little child. When I was a little child, I used to love to go to my Uncle Bruce's house when we did because my Aunt Marie would make two apple pies. One for me and Uncle Bruce and one for the rest of the people in the house. It used to make me feel so special to have just this one pie made for just me and my uncle Bruce. We would douse it with whip cream, put the pan in front of us, and we would just eat it right out of the ends of the pan. And I loved it. And then the Father told me to show her that she is my apple pie, and nothing more.

So, immediately I sent Mary a quick video telling her that I can explain this in a way that will make sense. And told her that it will take me a day or two to get it done, but I was sure she would understand now. When I got stopped for the night, I did just that. It took me three hours or so to write it but this time, it made sense, and I was sure of it. I loved going to my Uncle Bruce's house to eat this apple pie. There was absolutely nothing to do with sex or romance when going to eat this apple pie, but I loved it. And I told her, she is my apple pie that I love so much.

Oh, thank God, she understood, and everything was back to normal. We were both relaxed with talking. But she was still skeptical and rightfully so. I mean I am a man, I do live in the United States, and I guess it is pretty common over there for women to want to hook up with an American so they can live in the US. So it was the next day or so, she called me just as I was pulling into the shippers to pick up a load of onions. As I am walking back in forth from the office and getting my trailer ready to back to the dock, she asked me something. She asked how would I feel if she got with another man, would this ruin our friendship? I told her that it would be up to her and the man

she was with, not me. I told her that I will do whatever it takes to keep our friendship but if she gets with another man, he or she might not want me in the picture. Then she proceeded to tell me that if she was to get with somebody, she would make sure he knew about our friendship and that if he didn't like it, then he could hit the road. Now she is a lot less skeptical, she knows that I am not after sex or romance.

Then our Father asked me if I wanted to know what those emails were about that He had me send her. Yes, Yes, and Yes, I want to know because that was so scary and made no sense to me whatsoever. Then He says, I told you that you two are going through this together and you two are sharing every real-life experience. I am thinking yea okay, I helped her through her surgery and such. She made me feel very special by allowing me to help her. Okay we shared that. Then He says no David, when you were writing to long emails to Mary, you were feeling what she was going to be feeling when she read what you wrote.

Wait a second Father, you mean to tell me I could feel what she will be feeling when she reads what I have written, even though she hasn't read it yet. Yes David, you are sharing real-life experiences with her, and you are going through this together. When she would read the shorter emails in between the long emails, she was feeling what you were feeling, and that is why she didn't tell you to take a hike.

> Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

I was and am literally doing unto Mary as I would want her to do unto me. Why? Because the way my actions will make her feel, is what I will feel, before she will even feel it. That is why we do unto others as we would have them do unto us. Just for the nay sayers, the woman comes from the man, and you cannot say or be a woman, without the word man. This is what I have told you all in the previous books, The entire Bible is about love, but the way we can truly learn to love

is by being taught by our Father which is the law and the prophets. Remember the law is our schoolmaster.

> Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. (Galatians 3:24)

Okay Father, you have got me hooked on, and there is no way I am letting go of this. I am feeling the best I ever have. I have never felt emotions like I am now. And even though it has been a rollercoaster ride trying to understand this, I feel better about my life than I ever have. It makes sense now why I couldn't stop watching the videos, it now made sense as to why I wanted to hear from her so much. It now made sense as to why I feel she is the most beautiful woman in the world. It now makes sense as to why I feel so special when her daughter talks to me on the phone. It makes sense as to why it makes me feel special when her daughter calls me Uncle David. I mean I feel like I belong there and not here. Not in Mary's house but in that area.

Now you all are going to learn how good this really makes me feel. I have told you all in several of the previous books, that I am ready to die. Even so much as how I use to think about killing myself other than the time, I tried to take my own life. I think it was about a month ago or so, I actually told the Father that I wouldn't mind if He waited a few years to end the world. Yes, I know why I am here, and I know that it is because the world is getting ready to end, but doggonit, I have never felt so good in my life.

I mean I am in love with this woman and her daughter, and I am 8,000 miles away from them. Her daughter is just adorable. But remember the Father told me that He still has to reel me in. So, Mary and I are already planning on what we will be doing when I go over there in November for my first of many trips over.

I was going to go there in early September because I knew there was a new book coming, and I would need a picture for the cover. But I was going through a dark time because I was being chastised and rebuked for something that I was doing. Well, I had a few things

going on at that time, one of those things being the trip, so I cancelled everything. I wasn't sure of what it was. You see, I had just gotten a brand new truck with the company that I have been with for a couple years now. When they first offered it to me, I almost didn't take it because it isn't blue. It is gray.

Well as I am sitting there at the terminal, I tell the Father I can't take this truck because it is not blue. And you had me show everybody that you put me in a blue and white truck because I am sitting on your right side now. If I take this truck, it means I won't be sitting on your right side anymore. Then He tells me to think about some of the other trucks with the same company, and to think about what I have seen on them. Okay they have decaling and such. So, He tells me that I can put some blue and white striping on this new truck. Okay, you got it, I will definitely take this truck then.

This conversation between the Father and I was on a Saturday night, so Sunday during the day, I moved all of my stuff from the blue truck to the new one. I had to wait till Monday morning for the shop guys to come in so they could put plates on the truck. So, as they were doing that and getting it registered, I asked the manager if it was okay for to put some striping on the truck. And after they said yes, I walked right over to the place that they recommended.

Now my first trip out with this truck, it broke down. Apparently when the truck was manufactured, they didn't secure an underneath airline properly and it rubbed up against the brake chamber when I applied the brakes. Needless to say, I spent nine hours on the side of the road waiting for road service to come and fix it. Then the very next night, I hit a deer. The damage wasn't that bad but it was a brand new truck.

Everything on the truck still worked but it did have a little body damage. So, after talking to the insurance company, they said I could take it to any Peterbilt dealer with a body shop to get it fixed. So, I took it to the town where my daughter and grand babies are so I could spend some time with them. And there was something wrong with the wiring in the truck that was causing my lane departure warning system to not work, so I figured I would just have that fixed there

as well. Well, that cost me almost a week off of work. The truck payments do not stop when I stop so this put me behind.

One of the projects that I had going on at that time was getting the books put into audio. The Father had been putting it on my conscience that I already give the manuscripts away for free so why am I wasting His money on putting them in audio. I mean I listen to what I write all the time, so why can't anyone else? Then one day, one of the businesses that were putting them into audio, called me and told me that they needed my Amazon credentials so they could put the books of Amazon. No way, I am not giving you that. My one and only pay card is linked to Amazon so if I give you this information, I am giving you my life. And as soon as I hung up the phone, I knew what I was being rebuked for. I was wasting the Father's money on something that the public can have for free.

So now after cancelling this trip, and finding out what I was being rebuked for, I knew that I needed to book another trip over. But at this point, things hadn't happened with Mary and I yet. Yes, we had established some kind of relationship on the phone at work, but nothing like it is now. When I say nothing hadn't haoppened yet, I am saying we hadn't decided as to when I should come over there.

So, I asked Mary, when do you think I should come over? I tell her that I am thinking the end of October. She tells me that she would rather that I would wait until the first part of November so that she will be fully recovered, and we can go do several things, such as sightseeing, swim with whale sharks, etc.. So, I do not waste any time, things are starting to get back to normal with my pay now, so I book a 10-day trip in early November. Well, I will only be there for 7 full days and then 2 partial days with time differences and layovers.

As I said, we were planning on what to do while I was there because I had told her that this is the first of several trips over and I wanted to have fun while I was there. And because we are now sharing everything together, I can't wait to get there and experience the lesson I will be getting while I am there. I mean, for years I have been in hard core, hands on, one on one training with the Father but now I get to experience this with someone else. It is now hands on,

hardcore, one on two training. What a wild experience this is going to be. And I am thinking this is going to be huge. Because every time He sends me somewhere, something big happens, but now Mary is going to experience it with me. I cannot wait.

Once again, I am not giving any amounts, but it had been a while sense I had told Mary that I was going to be paying her medical bill. Unbeknownst to me at the time, this was one of the very first shared experiences between Mary and me. And yes, I send money every week to her because the way the Father made me feel was that it is not her medical bill, but our medical bill. I told her when I started paying it, I didn't know why, but I just knew that it was our medical bill and not hers. I mean I knew what was going on, but at the same time, I didn't want to freak her out and make things harder for the Father.

In our planning, Mary sent me a video and asked me if I ate seafood. She was asking because she is going to be preparing meals from there to help me experience the Philippines, the Philippine way. Because that is what I want to do. But the video showed her looking into some kind of container of unclean seafood. I could tell easily for whatever it was, it did not have scales nor fins. Now I quickly sent Mary a message telling her that I cannot eat anything unclean and then proceeded to tell her that any seafood must have scales and fins if I am going to be able to eat it. Within minutes she sent a message back telling me that she feels so unclean.

As I am seeing this, I asked the Father if I could eat unclean things while I am there for the love of others. Immediately, the Father told me to think back of the two times I have eaten unclean things for the love of others since 2011..

I quickly remembered that I am no longer allowed to have any contact with these two people again. This is talked about in previous precepts, so we are not going to show that again. But then He asked me if I want the same thing to happen to me with Mary. No way was my reply. Then He flashed these two verses in front of my mind.

> And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:30)

> Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Corinthians 6::17-18)

During our conversations, Mary has been telling me that she wants to rent a car while I am there and put me up in a hotel. She wants to do this because she feels that is the least she can do because of me paying the medical bill. Remember this is part of both of us learning that we are now sharing every real-life experience and doing everything together even though we are 8,000 miles apart from one another. So, I am onboard with what she is saying because we are going through this together.

In one of the videos, she had sent me, she was showing me her daughter eating a low-fat chocolate mix with rice for breakfast. This caught my attention because it is a healthy low-fat breakfast with chocolate. Then several emails later that day, I told her that I that I want to try some of the dishes they make there. I want to be adventurous on my first trip there and have a lot of fun. And one the ways of having fun for me is learning of the culture and trying different things to eat. As long as it is not unclean things, I am willing to try anything.

After telling her this, she said that she was going to have to get me a condo instead of just a regular hotel. I told her no, I because I didn't want to have her to pay extra. She replied back, we are sharing remember. She got me there, I guess I just thought that I was the one learning and I never figured on her feeling this way.

Somewhere in the beginning of our conversations, Mary mentioned that she had a friend that has been pursuing her for 3

years, but she has no interest in being with a man. She is firm on her boundaries and morals. Well, it was just a few days after she told me that she was going to rent a car and put me up in a hotel. She messaged me and told me this friend had transportation and then he and I would share a room. At first glance, I just said okey, I hope he doesn't mind me snoring, but I immediately started to send several emails containing several questions.

Beings how I have been working with the Father for years now, I should have known that this was Him starting to put it on my conscience that something is not right with this picture. But I also just came back from a 3 mile walk while doing a Tagalog lesson. One of main languages in the Philippines. I figure if I am going to moving there someday, I should go ahead and learn their language. And I needed to get back on the road to maintain my schedule to make on time delivery.

Immediately after starting to drive, the Father starts telling me that I am not sharing real life experiences with this friend of hers. He also tells me that I am not doing everything together with this friend of hers. Then in a bold voice, He said you are not sharing a room with anyone. Okay, now I have to back up and wonder why He is saying all of this. Then He tells me you are going to a third world country, and you need not be so trustworthy.

Okay, I have known for years that I am guaranteed His protections as long as I hearken to His voice. And as you all should know by now, I may gripe and complain a lot, but I always hearken to His voice. So, I am guaranteed protection, so why am I being told that I am going to a Third World country, and I need not be so trustworthy.

Then over the next few hours, I started thinking about documentaries that I have seen where Americans have gone to other countries and have gotten robbed and killed. Then I start thinking about how a friend's cousin went to the Philippines for a woman and was found floating dead in the ocean not to long after he got there. Then I start thinking about all the crime shows that I have watched over the years. I just pondered on this while I drove that evening.

At the end of my shift, I sent Mary an email telling her of how the Father told me that I am not sharing a room with anyone. Then proceeded to tell her about all the scenarios that I had come up with in my head that could go wrong with doing things the way she implied they would when she told me that I would be sharing a room with this friend. And I did mention that I was a little concerned about her not wanting to pay for the rental and hotel room. I told her not to do either, that I would just take care of this myself beings how I have the money anyway. I was thinking that she was only wanting to do this to share the experience.

I got an email back from her the next day stating that she was wrong for believing in me because she didn't want anyone to think of her as a criminal. I immediately told her that I do not think she is a criminal and that all that I sent were assumptions that I had come up with because the Father told me that I should not be so trustworthy, and that I was not sharing a room with anyone.

It was the very next day; I got a call from Mary. I started to tell her that I was sorry for making the email sound as I thought she was a criminal, but she cut me off and said, let me be sorry first. She went on to explain that our culture is completely different than theirs. We all have individual housing, well most. We do not live like they do there. They have 20 people living in a house over there, as to when we have many single family houses over here. She was very apologetic for thinking that I would be okay with sharing a room with a stranger. I told her that we are taught from a very young age, do not trust strangers. I tell her about how people kidnap children here, there is a molestation problem over here and we teach our children about stranger danger.

We talked for about an hour and a half. During our conversations, she said, 'David, I am going to make a promise to you". Then she goes on to promise that she will be the best host while I am there, and that she will take care of me from the time I get off the plane, till the time I get back on the plane. And after we got off the phone, the Father told me that this was her feeling what I was feeling, and that is why she was so apologetic. I had never thought about her sharing things

with me the way that I am sharing with her. But it was right then, I realized just how this really is. She is falling for me, just the same as I am her. We are truly sharing every real-life experience together. Now things are even more fun, but serious at the same time. We both share every real-life experience and we are doing everything together.

I need to share what the Father had told me right as all of this begun, and then I will be showing how this intertwines with this entire lesson.

> Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Matthew 19:6)

I guess I shouldn't say right as all this begun, it was more like in between the first and second scary email that He had me write to Mary. I was driving that evening and He kept having me say the last part of this verse over and over. What therefore God hath joined together, let no man put asunder. I probably said this out loud 20 times that evening.

At that time, I was thinking that nobody is going to stop me from moving to the Philippines. Everybody I knew, except my daughter, was telling me that I shouldn't do this. I had one person even call me to tell me that if I go there, I will die. Just as I have told you all in the other books or precepts, I will not die one second before, or after the Father wills me to die. And that reminded me that if I don't go trying not to die, or trying to save my life, I will lose my life with the Farther. At this point, I was thinking that Mary is my lure that our Father is using to place this hook in my jaw to get me to move over there, and nobody will stop me. I was ready right then and there to just get on a plane and just not come back.

But remember the Father told me that He still has to reel me in. This made me realize that I cannot just jump this time and hope it is high enough. Now I knew that this is going to be a process, but at the same time, nobody is going to stop me. But then after a couple days of hearing the let no man asunder in my mind, I decided to look to

see which verses are around this verse. Not that I didn't know, but I wanted to make sure I was starting to understand this better.

> And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Matthew 19:5-6)

I think this is what Mary and I both fought against for a long time. I think in the back of her mind, that she thought this was going to lead to sex. We both have boundaries and walls up against this. But after thinking about everything that she and I have been through over the past few months, I realized that we are already sharing real-life events together, we are sharing the bills, so to speak. Yes, I am sending money to pay the hospital bill, but she already paid that with her credit card. All I am doing is paying it down quickly, so she doesn't have to pay so much extra for interest, or usury. Then in return, she is paying for the cost of my hotel and rental car because I have already paid for my plane ticket there. Or at least I thought she was going to pay for the rental car.

We have been sharing each other's emotions through her hospital stay and surgery. I mean the Father had her send me several quick videos throughout the entire process, every step of the way. I have only given you all a few examples of this, but in reality, I felt like I was there with her. And at the same time, she kept saying "thank you for always being there David" in many of these videos. We went through that together even though we are 8,000 miles apart.

There were and are many times that we both are thinking alike. I used to call it something like we are one in the same. Our thought paths would be on the same thing at the same time. I realized that we are becoming one. Not one in the same, but we are becoming one. We are experiencing everything together as one person. That is the only way she is able to feel what I am feeling, and that is the only way I am able to feel what she is feeling. We are sharing every real-life event and

going through everything as one. And we are 8,000 miles apart. So, it requires no sex or romance at all. It has everything to do with true love. And this actually started some time ago during our phone calls at her work. We connected on so many levels that it is almost unreal.

Now I show you all this because I want to share how strong this love is and doing everything as one really is. And I must say, it took me by surprise. A few weeks ago when I started to realize that I was experiencing what Mary was going to be feeling, even before she started feeling a certain way, I started to think that I might not want to be smoking when I got there. I thought this because Mary had mentioned that she doesn't smoke and I know she had a little girl, and most parents that don't smoke, don't want that around their children, and rightfully so.

So, as we are talking on the phone one day, I tell Mary that I think I am going to quit smoking before I come over there because the Father is telling me that I am going to be feeling your negative vibes towards me when I am smoking around you all. Mary proceeded to tell me that she wouldn't mind a bit if I smoked because we are two different people. So, I started asking the Father about this because maybe I am getting my wires crossed or something.

Now I need to explain this here. I have been telling you all in several of the books or precepts, that I will die with a cigarette in my hand. This decision was made back in 2016 right after the baptism of the Holy Ghost. That is when one of my brothers told me I couldn't be right with God because I smoke. As explained, I looked him in the eyes and the Father had me say if I put down cigarettes to try and save my life, I will lose my life with the Father. So, this thinking about quitting is a very scary idea for me.

With the way the Father was making me feel, I decided to try and quit one night. Yes, it is hard to put the smokes down, but that last time I did it in 2010, I just quit cold turkey, so quitting this way does not scare me at all. I went three and a half years before I picked them back up. But this time, I didn't even make it 24 hours. I still had it in the back of my mind that Mary said I didn't need to worry about quitting.

Then about a day or two later, Mary calls me up to tell me that she does want me to quit smoking before I come there because her daughter does have pretty severe asthma. Now I am way ahead of her in the lesson that we are going through, so I tell her that this is what the Father has been telling me. He has been telling me that I will feel your negative thoughts and feelings about me smoking while I am there. And I do smoke two and a half packs a day, so I am certain that will bother you a lot.

But then I started thinking about it and realized it wasn't going to be when I got there, I was already starting to feel her negativity to me smoking, that is why I started to feel the way that I was feeling. But now she has confirmed that she does not want me smoking anymore. Oh my gosh, it just hit me like a ton of bricks. I told you all that I am way ahead of her on this lesson, but she told me that she wanted me to quit smoking before getting there. She didn't say that she didn't want me to smoke around her daughter and or her, she said she wanted me to quit before I got there. That makes me wonder if I am staying there in November? Am I going to be around them more than I originally thought? Anyway, there is some real time thinking for you all. Actually, I know what it is, the Father is working on her to bring her to the area in the lesson I am at.

And now that she has confirmed that she does want me to quit, I start asking our Father to please help me do this. Now I need to mention that at this time, I had only known that her daughter had asthma, but not that much more. Because I talk to her all the time, and she seems like a very healthy and active 5-year-old. Then a couple of nights ago, well nights for her, days ago for me, she was messing around on her laptop and found some pictures that she decided she would share with me.

It was evening there when she sent these two short videos, and two pictures. All four were of her daughter and her in the hospital last December. And because I am always looking for any means of communication from Mary, as soon as I can get it, I look at these first thing in the morning. I even looked before I lit up a cigarette or poured my morning coffee. I saw Mary sitting on the hospital bed

leaning over her daughter with deep compassion, sorrow, and worry for her daughter. While her daughter lay there in the hospital bed with some breathing apparatus over her mouth and nose. Then I saw in one of these photos, her daughter sitting up with this apparatus over her mouth and nose, her eyes being shut, but leaning toward her mommy, as to say help me mommy.

I felt the pain that Mary was feeling when I saw those videos and they were from last December. And I could hear her daughter saying help me mommy when I looked at that photo. And it hurts like I have never hurt before. Needless to say, I quit as soon as I seen them. I didn't have to think about it, I didn't have to try, I just flat out didn't lite up again. Well, I did smoke one about 6 hours into the day because I started getting very agitated with traffic, but that is the only cigarette I have had since I saw those videos and pictures of her in the hospital. And it still hurts to think of that. That poor little baby, nobody should have to go through what they have, but I will be darned if I am going to in anyway make either of them think that being around me is going to be a danger to their lives.

Yea I benefit from quitting. I don't smell like cigarette smoke, I can breathe easier, and other things, but I didn't quit trying and save my life. I quit for the love of others. And as I have shown in previous books, anything we do for the love of others, is without sin. But it must be genuine love for others that we expect nothing in return for. So, when I can feel the pain and anguish my smoking will bring them, I am completely justified to put down the cigarettes for the love of them. And this love is very strong. When people do things for others and expect to get something in return, they are not doing it for the love of others, they are doing for the love of themselves. And that has nothing to do with the Father, Jesus, or the Word, and or the Bible.

Oh, and at this time, I am having a blast sharing all these life events with Mary. I couldn't believe how much fun it was to have someone believe in me and want me to help her in her real-life crises. I just felt so needed and blessed to be a part of this. It was bringing me such a joy, that I almost think I would have been willing to back away from some of the things our Father has taught me over the years.

No, not everything, but being alone was something that I definitely started thinking that I got wrong.

Then things started to take a twist too. Mary told me that she has this male friend that has been pursuing her for the past three years, but she tells me that she has no interest in this. This is the same friend that she suggested me sharing a room with, but we had worked that out. I was working on booking us some rooms with the intention of getting one room for the two of them. She and her child in one room and another room for myself. Then she sprung it on me that she and this friend needed a room for themselves and one for me. I guess her daughter isn't coming on this excursion.

Now I have got to figure out how I am supposed to share life experiences with her while she is sharing her life experiences with another besides her child. Now I cannot figure why our Father has told me to fall head over heels for this woman, give my heart to her, fall in love with her only to find out that she is in love with someone else already. This has thrown everything into a humongous tailspin if you will. I cannot figure this out. Mary and I quit talking for a bit when she sprung this on me. I don't know if I was now upset because she didn't tell me that she had been sleeping with this guy for 3 years plus, or that our Father just told me to fall in love with a married woman. No, she is not married by man's laws, but as explained in previous books, she is married in our Father's eyes. And without us even sleeping together, I am still interfering with a married couple. And I am not here to destroy anything or anyone, especially not cause problems between a couple.

But before we stopped talking for a while, she had told me that she had been talking to him about me since she started talking to me on the phone. This puzzled me because she never mentioned this to me. I started to feel like she didn't tell me about him because I would be less willing to give her financial help if I knew that she had a husband. As explained in previous books, when man and woman cleave together, they become one flesh. This means her bills are also his bills as well. And now she had told me about him, she had also told me that he makes good money. Don't get me wrong, if they together

ask me for help, as one couple, I am more than willing to do so, but because she hid this from me, it made me wonder why. It even made me wonder if maybe she was keeping the idea of him being in the picture so she could lead me on. Because since we have been talking, she has always told me that she is a single mom that insist on raising her child without the help of others.

It wasn't very long, maybe three or four days, we started talking again as she called me. And yes, I eagerly answered the phone. I mean my feelings for her have not changed and I still love listening to her voice. And we continued to plan the trip. And yes, the closer it came to the trip, the more I started to wonder if I was really supposed to go there. So, I started asking the Father, and even started to try to make some kind of excuses as to why I shouldn't go. But I got a firm answer from several of these so-called attempts to back out, that I must go. I mean, as far as I knew at this point, it was that somehow or another, we were still going to be sharing life events. No, I couldn't understand with this other man involved, but as I have stated in the past, when I feel I am being told to do something, I do it.

But things even took more of a twist just a few days before the trip. Mary had told me that she had quit her job. I know she had told me a couple of times after she went on medical leave, that she hated her job. She told me that she didn't like the hours, and she did not like the people she worked with. I didn't give it much thought because I just figured she knew what she was doing. Then the night before my flight, she called me and I told her that I paid a certain amount on a billboard advertising campaign to promote the seventh book. I thought that this would make her happy because all the time she was with the company that she worked for, she always supported and encouraged me to promote books. Oh boy was I wrong. She got mad at me for doing such a thing. She told me that she got upset because of the times that I complained about promoting the books, but nothing was ever happening. Like I told you all, we have had some pretty personal conversations in the two years that we have known each other. She did mention that I needed to focus on helping her out before I did any more promotions on the books.

Now with her being mad at me, and this newfound knowledge of her keeping her boyfriend/husband out of all of our previous conversations, I started to seriously try to get out of going. I even asked her the night before my flight if I should just cancel the coming over and only focus on getting her bill paid off. But she told me to just come on over and we will deal with that later. Beings how this was the night before the flight over, I told my daughter, that if they cancel the flight in Dallas Fort Worth airport, I will just come back home. I told her this because I got a text from the airline that there might be a delay in Dallas because of the weather. I was at a point where I really did not want to go.

One of the first things the Father told when this lesson started to get serious is that I must go to be in the Philippines because I cannot fulfill the scriptures here in the United States. Yes, the woman with the five husbands, and the 40 days and nights of fasting have been fulfilled, and a few other things, but all the things that will be happening on, around or in the water have not been fulfilled, and cannot be fulfilled until I am over there. I think that is where the revealing of me is going to happen, not here in the United States as I have been thinking for years. It never dawned on me that I cannot do that stuff here, but it must be around the water, islands, and ships. And of course, there will be a better opportunity for nasty weather around the water.

Now with all of this newfound information that Mary has shared with me, maybe the Father is insisting that I go on this trip so that I will get caught up in the weather and wind up on a ship or two.

Here is where I need to pause for a second and show why I have stated in several of the previous books, or precepts, that the end is near. Now in the sixth book, we showed how I am now sitting on the right side of God the Father in the heavenly places. Unbeknownst to me, I have been sitting on the right side of God the Father since the baptism in March of 2016.

> But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;

> From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. (Hebrews 10:12-14)

I must say that I do not think I was expecting the end when the second book was written and published, but when He told me to make my name know twice and to get the book done, or I would have to start over from the beginning, as shown in previous books, then I started expecting the end.

Back to getting ready for the trip, I realized that the typhoon season was going to end just before I got there. So, I started to think that maybe the Father was being persistent about me making this trip was so that I could get a layout of the land or something. I was just sure it had something to do with me getting ready to move over there. I even went as far as to tell Mary that this would just be my first trip of many. Because in the back of my mind, I remember that the Father had told me that He did still have to reel me in. So, He has me hooked, but something is going to happen at a later date that is going to get me to make the move.

Now I am going to be doing a chapter on the trip a little later, so I am going to end this chapter here. Mary and the trip will be talked about in a lot of the chapters, but I am going to do a chapter on what it is like being back in the Garden of Eden, and being the firstborn, as we showed you all in the last book or precept.

BECOMING THE FIRSTBORN

I want to do a chapter on becoming the firstborn because as it is stated in Psalm 89, God is making me into the firstborn. This is the reason I have the website, davidofpsalm89.com. As we go through this, you can see if you can hear when this has happened, or even if it has happened yet.

> Then thou spakest in vision to thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. (Psalm 89:19-27)

We are also doing this chapter because as we showed you all in the seventh book or precept, I am now living in the Garden of Eden. The first thing I want to mention is that the Garden of Eden is not a physical place. You or anyone else will never find it, because it does

not come with observation. Just as the kingdom of God does not come with observation.

> And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you. (Luke 17:20-21)

Remember how we got kicked out of the Garden as shown in the last book or precept? We were all here on the first day of creation. And then He tells us this in the book of Deuteronomy also.

> For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; (Deuteronomy 30:11-15)

Now I need to mention something here. There are many that think that they can find the arc of the covenant, or the arc of God in a physical place. It will never be found because it is within each of us as we are told. But in order to understand this, we truly need to listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> That the king said unto Nathan the prophet, See now, I dwell in an house of cedar, but the ark of God dwelleth within curtains. (2 Samuel 7:2)

> Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth? It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:21-22)

Now I need to mention a couple of things. First, I have been listening to the scriptures as I drive, and yes, I realized that we are spread out as a curtain, but if I am hearing this correctly, we stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain. Does that sound like the people are a level of heaven? Now think about this, when the Father starts pouring out His wrath amongst the people, everything they thought they knew, will be shaken. Ever heard the expression, "shake my world"? Well, isn't that kind of the same thing? Just giving you some food for thought!

Now I want to point out something that I brought up in the third and fourth books. I mean I have talked about this in other books, but do chapters on the Rock in these books. I wear fringes on the four corners of my garments. There is a spiritual tent around us at all times. These fringes keep the door to these tents shut, and that keeps evil away. If you want to know more about this, I suggest reading the fourth book or precept, Jesus is here.

That is the light that our Father created on the first day even though He did not create the sun, moon, and stars until the fourth day. I am not going to even try to explain it as we did in the last book, so I suggest you read, Precept seven "For The Powers OF Heaven Shall Be Shaken" if you are familiar with the topic at hand.

Remember how God the Father placed fire all around the Garden?

> So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:24)

And as we have shown in the previous books, we must go through these spiritual flames if we want to get back into the Garden. I have been going through these flames for several years now and didn't even realize when the Father started to move me into the Garden. Remember, the Garden of Eden cannot and does not come with observation. But it is within each of us. And there is absolutely no way of getting back into the Garden if you think our Father has changed. If you believe the law and prophets do not apply to you. If you continue to seek to celebrate and honor all these birthdays and holidays in which He commanded them not, nor did they come into his heart.

> Thus saith the Lord, Go and get a potter's earthen bottle, and take of the ancients of the people, and of the ancients of the priests; And go forth unto the valley of the son of Hinnom, which is by the entry of the east gate, and proclaim there the words that I shall tell thee, And say, Hear ye the word of the Lord, O kings of Judah, and inhabitants of Jerusalem; Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring evil upon this place, the which whosoever heareth, his ears shall tingle. Because they have forsaken me, and have estranged this place, and have burned incense in it unto other gods, whom neither they nor their fathers have known, nor the kings of Judah, and have filled this place with the blood of innocents; They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind: Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that this place shall no more be called Tophet, nor The valley of the son of Hinnom, but The valley of slaughter. (Jeremiah 19:1-6)

And as we just showed about Mary in the last chapter, If you are continuing to touch the unclean things, you will not be allowed into the Garden of Eden. Why would He allow you to come back in when you don't believe Him anyway? You would destroy His house

Now that we have gone over the basis of getting back into the Garden of Eden, let us start talking about when this started happening with me. Ever since the Father had me show you all that I am Living in the Garden of Eden, I have been wondering because a lot of things seemed to just stay as they were. Or I couldn't see a difference in how things were working other than the real, in-real-time live conversations that the Father and I had in the seventh book and recorded them. And I have also realized that these conversations happen all the time now.

So, the seventh book, For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken was published on March 25, 2024. Like I said, I wasn't sure how I was now living in the Garden. And then come the middle of July, I got a call from the company asking me if I wanted a brand new Peterbilt 579. Now I have told you all that I almost didn't take the truck because it is not blue. As the Father had me show you all in the sixth book or precept, that was one of the first things that He did to get me to understand that I am sitting on the right side of God in the heavenly places,

> Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: (Ephesians 1:20-21)

As explained in the sixth precept, the truck came first and then all of my clothing became blue and white. So, when they offered me this gray truck, I hesitated. I even spent an hour or so trying to convince the company of the reason I wouldn't take it. Then I heard that still calm voice inside my conscience tell me that it is okay because I can

put blue and white striping on it. Not much longer than that, I went and got the keys.

Before the truck even had plates on it, I was over at the place where the company takes the trucks to have company logos put on. That is where the company told me to go to have striping put on it. We just talked about getting some striping on it at first, but I also took a business card so that I could call them if I came up with a specific design that I wanted on the truck. Because this was just the initial conversation about getting some striping on the truck. And beings how I was already on a load that had to be delivered, we couldn't do anything at that time.

On my first trip, I broke down around thirty minutes away from the customers. That is where the brake line rubbed up against the drive shaft because it was installed improperly. I think I might have said brake chamber before. I was on the side of the road for nine hours waiting to get that repaired. The very next night, I hit a deer with this truck. If you know anything about driving any vehicle, you know that sometimes you can't help but hit a deer if it runs out in front of you. If you swerve, you can hit another vehicle or flip the truck over. If you slam the brakes too hard, you can cause the truck to jackknife or slide off the road. It is best to just hold onto the steering wheel, slow down, and hope the damage to the vehicle isn't that bad.

Fortunately, the damage was not that bad, but it still needed to go to a body shop to be repaired. While at the body shop, I had some faulty wiring replaced. Which cost me about an entire week off work. Now I have told you all before, I live in the truck, and still live paycheck to paycheck. So, when this happened, I fell behind on the truck payments. Oh yea, I forgot to mention that the truck payments on this truck were more than the last. And it is because this is a much better truck than the last one. Yes, I really liked the last truck, but this one has a better motor, it rides better, it pulls better, it gets better fuel mileage, and it has a lot more room on the inside. I almost feel like I am driving a Cadillac now.

But this week that I had to take off, I could go to a Peterbilt dealer with a body shop of my choice. It just so happens that they have one in

Davenport, Iowa. This is where my daughter lives. It just so happens that the week that the truck was getting repaired, there was a truck jamboree going on at the Iowa 80 Truck stop. This is where all these fancy trucks come to once a year and show off customized trucks. I went to this for the first time even though I used to live in that area, and have been driving truck for 33 years. I want to point out now that I do nothing on my own.

> I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. (John 5:30)

At this time, I had a few different projects going on. One of those things is I was going to have my books in a book fair in the Philippines in September. Then I had a trip planned to the Philippines for around that time. Then I was also having the books put into audio. I panicked because now I was thinking that I did wrong by getting this truck. I cancelled everything. I even called the company and told them that I had to bring the truck back. This is the first time I heard the Father tell me with my own voice on this matter, we will get through this.

When I heard Him say this, I decided not to take the truck back because I was really starting to enjoy the benefits of having this new truck. And I had the reassurance that it wasn't the truck, by Him telling me this. Then He had one of the companies that I was using to have the books put into audio books, ask me to give them my Amazon credentials so that they could put the books on Amazon. No way was I going to do this, and I immediately knew that this was what I was being chastised and rebuked for.

> And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: (Hebrews 12:5)

When I knew Mary as Lydia, I had even told her that I give the manuscripts away for free, why should I make them into audio. On this topic, I am hoping to have the instructions on how to get the books read to you for free on my website, davidofpsalm89.com. I told Lydia that I listen to what I write all the time so there must be a way for everyone to listen as well. Instead of me paying thousands of dollars to have something done that people already have for free. And yes, I have downloaded some manuscripts on my computer, and my phone, and I can listen to them. But I have a Samsung phone, and I do not know how to get them read to you on an iPhone. Any computer that has Word program can be read to you. I know some people with an iPhone, but I haven't found the time to see if I can figure that out yet.

Even though I cancelled the book fair in the Philippines, Urlink put the books in the book fair. Now I realized that this was not supposed to be cancelled. But as I have told you all in the previous precepts, if I feel the Father is telling me to do something, I don't hesitate, I jump and just hope I jump high enough. And that is exactly what I did here. I knew I was being rebuked for something, so I cancelled everything. And that is why the books were still in the book fair. Because I was not supposed to cancel the book fair. And now I am paying the remaining balance on that.

But I do think I was supposed to cancel my trip there. This is because if I had kept that trip, I wouldn't have met Mary because it was about the same time she started to have unbearable pains because of her gallbladder. But since I realized that canceling the trip was questionable as well, I have booked a new trip in November, and this time, I am going.

Now we are going back to the truck and striping that I had decided to have put on it. When I first talked to the company about putting the striping on, we had just a simple plan of what we were going to do. But about two weeks after initially talking to them, I seen a truck that had a particular design on it that I liked. But there was something more to it than just that. The number of this truck was 777. I just knew that the Father was telling me this is what we are starting

with. I took a picture of the truck, sent it to Card Signs, the company putting the decals on the truck. But told them that the colors had to be blue and white. Completely different to the colors of the truck I just took a picture of, but that was the base design. Then over the next couple of weeks, the Father started to tell me what He wanted on the truck. We wound up putting more striping than originally thought. It has blue and white striping, but then we put some orange, blending into yellow striping. We put Living in the Garden of Eden on the sides of the hood. Because as we showed in the seventh precept, I am living in the Garden of Eden. We put The "Word" in four different spots on the truck. Two on the fenders and two on each cab extender on both sides, along with a QR code to lead people to my website. Because as we showed you all in the sixth precept, I am the walking word of God. I am the Word. Then on both sides we put The Firstborn giving an understanding. Because now that I am back in the Garden of Eden, I am the firstborn from the dead, back into the Garden of Eden. Then giving an understanding is because all the books are giving an understanding of our Father. Then on both sides, on sun visor, and on the back of the truck, we put, The rolling rise of the Sun. This is because of this.

> But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. (Malichi 4:2)

And on the back, it has this, The rolling rise of the Sun, as well, but it also has for those that have the ears to hear and the eyes to see. Then it mentions my website, davidofpsalm89.com. Then on the sides and on the back, right above my website, it shows, I am with lightning bolts. This is referring to how the son of Man will be just as the lightning in the sky.

> For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under

> heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day.
> (Luke 17:24)

Just like the scriptures say, I am always going from the east to the west and back to the east. But there is more to it and this I didn't quite comprehend until it was done. The orange and yellow striping is designed to look something like the color of the sky just before the sun comes up. Just before the sun comes up, we can see some orange in the sky, but right where the sun is getting ready to come up, it tends to be more yellowish. Well, when you see me driving the truck, you can see the orange in the front, fading into a yellow just on the front side of the doors. Then on the back side of the truck, it starts out orange, fading into yellow towards the back side of the doors. So, when you see me in the windows while I am going down the road, you can see the rolling rise of the Sun going from one part of the heavens to another part of the heavens. The Truck is a parable on wheels, designed by our Father. And now you know why He sent me to the truck show with all the customized trucks. Now I have one of those fancy trucks also, but mine is telling all that I am here now.

Now we have already talked about everything that is going on with Mary, and how Mary and I are now sharing every real-life event together. But we did not mention how when she went on medical leave, my miles slowed down as well. And this was at the same time that the Father was making me feel that her medical bills for this procedure were my medical bill as well, because we are sharing everything. And just after we spent all the money on getting all the decaling done on the truck.

You see, He had told me we would get through the falling behind a bit after hitting the deer. And it took a couple of weeks, but everything started to get back to normal. So, when the miles started to slow down with this new medical bill staring me in the face, again I asked the Father, how am I supposed to do this. Because I am not used to having bills. And on top of that, I need to have money on hand for when I do go to the Philippines. And again, He said we will get through this, and you are going to explain to everyone how you trust me.

So, I started asking where I start with this, because I started trusting the Father back in 2011 when He first called me to the Bible. But I think we are going to save that for a later chapter though. We are going to be talking about how I had to trust Him when I got this truck, then again when Mary took medical leave and even though my miles slowed down with a new medical bill staring me in the face.

You see, when I first got this truck, I thought I had screwed up by getting it as we already explained. But now all this started to happen with Mary. Yes, our relationship started out with her being Lydia, but that was only because of her work. But going through the process of learning that I was supposed to fall in love with her so that I would move over to the Philippines, was a little bit of a surprise for me because I am not allowed to be with any woman.

But when this all started to happen, I had to ask if this was coming from the Father, or was I being tempted by Satan. Remember how we showed that the serpent or Satan, is our imagination. But then the Father told me that I needed to remember that the Father and I, are one. And that I do nothing on my own.

> I and my Father are one. (John 10:30)

> I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. (John 5:30)

This was the Father telling me that He and I are doing this together. In other words, He was causing me to fall in love with her. This brings me back all the way to when I first read the Bible in 2011. See, when I read it for the first time, I heard that we are not to be eating the unclean, so I stopped as explained in previous books. Then as soon as I started to read it for the second time, I realized that the Father never told us to celebrate man-made holidays and birthdays, so I immediately stopped. No, I didn't have any knoledge of this before this and was doing the same as the rest of the world until then.

This was me stepping out into the unknown, trusting the Father to lead me through whatever the world threw at me. Even though I hadn't found anyone that believed in me, or even agreed to a degree with what I knew, I stuck, and still stick to His perfect instructions. We explained this in the last book or precept, that is why I am in the Garden of Eden. We are going to do a chapter later on this in this book about how I chose to go through this together with the Father since He called me to the Bible back in 2011. I will say this though, it is about stepping into the unknown, continuing to keep following Him, regardless of what anyone else thinks, and being brave enough to stand your ground, when you are persecuted for following His righteousness, and not this false Jesus that changed His perfection. This is why I am sure that this relationship I have with Mary will turn out to be okay. Not because this is just something that I want and am enjoying, I am seeking and listening to the Father.

It was because I stepped into this unknown and stood my ground, regardless of what others thought, I woke up on my 45th birthday knowing what to put in the first book or precept, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. As explained in the last book, this was shortly after I was circumcised in the flesh. This was also shortly after the cross appeared in the middle of my forehead. This is my seal that is talked about in the book of John.

> Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27)

Are you starting to hear what is going on? I have an open line of communication with my Father. This has been going on for years, but I never realized before we wrote the last book. He has been teaching me obedience for years, and yes, that is how most of the lessons in the books, or precepts have come about.

> Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:7-9)

In the 6th book, or precept, Declaring The End From The Beginning, we even told you all how to hear the Father's voice. We did this because He is talking to everybody, every day of the year, all day long. But nobody wants to listen to Him. I will not even try to explain that chapter again here, so if you want to learn about this if you haven't, I suggest buying or downloading the manuscript to that book on my website, davidofpsalm89.com.

One of the first and foremost things that you will have to do in order for you to hear Him, is trust Him and all that He is doing. I am going to give you all a few examples of things that have happened to me, so that you all can see it really takes a level of trust in Him, and not yourself.

> Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe. Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. (Philippians 3:1-3)

The first thing I am going to bring back to remembrance is when the Father told me not to go anywhere because my mom, when she was alive as my mom, wasn't coming home from the hospital. At this time, I was in Maine, I do not remember the exact location, but I was going to go to a nearby Walmart so that I could send some money

to my brother to redo the bathroom for my mom while she was in the hospital. This is explained in more detail in the second book, or precept, Behold a greater than Jonas is here. Now let me explain a little when the Father first told me that she wasn't coming home.

My mom used to live in Macon, MO. One day I was driving on the I-70, going east just outside of Kansas City, MO. I called my mom to talk a bit, and she told me that my sister and her were going to Columbia to go to the doctor. It just so happened, that I was going to be in Columbia just about an hour before her appointment time. Needless to say, we met up at the truck stop there, and I went with them to the doctor. They were talking about an upcoming surgery that my mom was going to be having. When the doctor told my mom about the risk and such, I was paying close attention to my mom. Just by her facial reactions, and with certain things to doctor said. And then the way she spoke to him about the risk, I knew right then and there, she wasn't coming home. This was way before the second book was written, so I kept what I was shown to myself. After the visit to the doctors, we went out for lunch, before I had to get back on the road. I had just enough time to go to the doctor with my mom, just so that I could be shown what was to come.

> Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. (John 16:13)

You cannot tell me that me being on that particular road on the precise day, and having just a few hours so that I could go to the doctors with my mom, is some kind of coincidence. Everything happens for a reason. Good or bad, there is nothing that the Father is not in control of. Yet, so many people have no fear of God.

In the months following, my brother and I were talking about redoing the shower for my mom, for when she would come home after the surgery. I couldn't tell him or my sister that I knew she was

going to die because I still wasn't allowed to tell anyone who I am. You know, to make things easier for her to get in and out of the shower. A couple of days before the surgery, I was sitting in Maine taking a 34-hour restart and decided to use my personal commute to go to a Walmart about 15 miles away. I was going to send my brother some money so that he would have the money to do this while my mom was still in the hospital. But for some reason, my electronic logging device would not allow me to use it. I tried for, what seemed to be an hour or so, but it would not let me use it. I even called the company as to why, and after them resetting it and a few other things, it still would not let me. Then I just sat there for a few minutes and started thinking about everything. And it hit me, mom isn't going home. That is why you won't let me use my personal commute.

I just called my brother and told him that I couldn't get to a Walmart, but did not tell him why. But I just knew that this was the Father's way of saying don't send the money, she isn't going there. In other words, she was going to die in the hospital. I kept talking with family and checking in to see how she was. Then Monday morning, I got a call from my sister telling me that mom was going to be released later that day. I started second guessing all that I thought I had been told. Because I was sure that I was shown that she wasn't coming back from the hospital

It was just a few hours later when I received another call from my sister telling me that my mom had now passed away from cardiac arrest. I won't give the details that she gave me, but just as the Father showed me, I was shown that my mom wasn't coming back from the hospital.

Now we are going to jump a little later than the last thing we just showed and talk about when and how our Father told me that I had to publish the second book, or precept, Behold a greater than Jonas is here. Let me explain.

The second book probably took the longest to publish. What I mean is that I started this book, got a lot of it done, but then because of certain things happening the way they did, I started to think that I wasn't supposed to write another book. But at the same time, I had

already paid the publisher that the first book was published with, the money to publish the second book. And because I was thinking I wasn't supposed to, I called them, canceled it, and they sent me a check for the amount in full. They sent it to my sisters house.

Then one day I was driving in Oklahoma, on I 44, going east. I stopped at a service plaza which was in the middle of the interstate, so that this one service station could service both sides. I needed to take a break. When I got back on the road, I had to merge into the traffic from the left, and not the right as most on ramps are here in the United Sates. Now everybody knows that it takes some time to build speed up in a semi, so I am guessing I was only doing 40-50 miles per hour by the time I was merging. As many would figure, I was not going to just jump back onto the interstate cutting people off and suddenly making them slow down abruptly. So, I kept in the left lane as I continued to build my speed. And as traffic flows, those in the left lane would switch to the right lane to allow me to do so as they pass me on the right.

I didn't even get down the road a couple of miles when I got pulled over by a state patrol. When he stopped me, he told me that I was not allowed to be in the left lane. Me, being in shock because I just came out of the service station on the left, didn't say a thing at first. Then I asked the patrolmen, we can't even pass. His reply was no, as I just sat there in amazement. I didn't even try to justify or clarify that I just came out of the service plaza because I couldn't believe that I got stopped for just doing my job. He just did a normal routine check on my license and gave me a warning.

Then shortly after I started driving, I started thinking about how everybody is a servant and or vessel of God. Then I started to think about how I just cancelled the publication of this book. Then I realized that I could route myself through my sisters, to pick up this check. I started to put all of this together, and then realized it was the Father that actually stopped me, not for doing anything wrong, but rather to tell me that I must proceed with the publication of the second book. Needless to say, we all know that book was published in October of

2018. And yes, this book is where we started to show that everybody in part of the one Son of God.

We have told you all of this because of something our Father brought to my attention this last summer. I was doing my daily exercise, as we explained in the last book or precept. I can honestly say, I was not thinking or even trying to think of the scriptures at this time, when all the sudden, I was told to think about the scriptures talking about a time, times, and a half time, and forty and two months, and or as we all know, three and a half years. They are all equal, or the same thing. At this time, we are going to show what I was being told to think about.

> Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. (Daniel 7:22-25)

Then the Father told me to think about where the scriptures talk about the 2300 days. So, as I stated, I was in the midst of working out, so at this time, I was just recalling that this is all in the book of Daniel, but I wasn't collating how this could connect. So, I was thinking that I would connect it all together after I was done exercising. But then He tells me to start thinking about the time in between the first and second books. Okay, now this really has me thinking about this.

Now I am not referring to who these kings are supposed to be, but the kingdoms I do believe are talked about in Daniel 2. And yes, we broke that vision down in the second book. I am going to say one thing about the fourth beast has come to think he can change times and laws. I am writing this part right at the end of 2024. Everybody through the world is celebrating a new year. But in God's calendar, the new year begins 2 weeks before Passover.

> These are the feasts of the Lord, even holy convocations, which ye shall proclaim in their seasons. In the fourteenth day of the first month at even is the Lord's passover. (Leviticus 23:4-5)

So, I ask, who changed the times? God the Father does not change, neither does His timeline. His years and new years will not change. Anyway, this is not the topic at hand, so let us get back on topic.

So, as soon as I was done with the exercise program and walked for a bit, I looked up what I just showed you. Then I had to look up what the 2300 days were about.

> And an host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practised, and prospered. Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spake, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed. ((Daniel 8:12-14)

By this time, I have several things going through my mind. I do not know who the kings are supposed to be, as we already stated. Except I am certain one of these kings is King Nebuchadnezzar of Daniel

two. The vision we explain in the second book, Precept two, Behold a greater than Jonas is here. But what is this sanctuary that is going to be cleansed in 2300 days? When was this daily sacrifice. Remember, I have shown in several of the books, we are to worship God in spirit and truth. That is because this is all spiritual and not physical. And as shown in previous books, our Father never commanded anyone to sacrifice animals. So, what could this daily sacrifice be?

Then I decided to look up the publication dates of the first two books. It turns out that the first Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening was published April 27, 2015. And Behold, a greater than Jonas is here was first published October 26, 2018. I stated they were first published because as you know, they were republished in 2023 with the precepts added. When we do the math, there is exactly 3.5 years, or 42, months, or a time, times, and a dividing of time, in between those two books. This really got my interest peaked. I didn't know what to think because I still had all these questions.

But now I must wonder, am I the sanctuary, is the earth the sanctuary, or what is going to be cleansed in 2300 days? Because I am certain that this sanctuary is not a physical sanctuary as in a building. I want to show the first verse of what we showed just a few minutes ago.

> Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High (Daniel7:22)

We need to be drawing our attention to how Ancient in the middle of a sentence is capitalized. We have shown this in previous book, in fact, I think we even talked about in it in the last one. Ancient is not a noun, so we need to be thinking of why it would be capitalized. Let us listen to another section of the Bible.

> Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the

> Lord? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. (Isaiah 45:21)
>
> Hast thou not heard long ago, how I have done it; and of ancient times, that I have formed it? now have I brought it to pass, that thou shouldest be to lay waste defenced cities into ruinous heaps. (Isaiah 37:26)
>
> Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: (Isaiah 46:10)

Now we can know why this Ancient is capitalized, it is because we can now know that it is referring to our Father. The King of Kings and Lord of Lords, as we showed you all in the last book, Precept seven, for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

Now what I am getting ready to state, I could be wrong, but I am going to state it anyway. We all know that Jesus had powers if we read the Bible as it is past tense. However, we have shown you all that the heavens are getting ready to be shaken in the last book, with the scriptures being the heavens. In the last book, we also stated that what people have read about Jesus, and thought he did, is going to be happening with me. Because I am that guy you read about, Jesus.

What I have stated so far, I am sure about but now is where I might be just a little off. But I really don't think I am. To finish this thought process, we need to realize when the 2300 days will be fulfilled. What I mean is, the Father brought this to my attention in the order I just laid out a few paragraphs ago. So, I think it is safe to figure those 2300 days is from the date of the publication date of the second book.

I was thinking about this earlier in the day today as I was driving. I am thinking in was last August as to when the Father brought all of this to my attention. I remember this because I remember thinking this is not for another 6 months. Yes, 2300 after that date, is February

11, 2025. I am really thinking that this will be the day that I will be revealed. But I was thinking that the days will be cut short for the elects sake, so maybe sooner. But I am more likely to think the days will be cut short, after I am revealed.

I sometimes think my revealing is also what makes me the firstborn. Now I realize that I was actually born again when I walked out into the wilderness back on March 8th of 2016. You see, when I left this world, in spiritual form, I had given everything I owned away, so I had nothing but the clothes on my back. Then after the baptism, I had nothing but the clothes on my back. Yes, when we are born, we are naked, but as explained in the previous books, I did strip down to let my clothes dry. So, I had to start all over in the new world that I was now in, with nothing. But when this revealing happens, that is when most of the things we have read about Jesus doing, will actually be happening to me, because I am that guy we all have read about.

Now I have also considered if maybe these 2300 days could be fulfilled from the time the third book was published. I say this because it was the third book in which the Father had told me to make my name known. He had the servant from West Memphis Arkansas, call me. This call happened in June of 2019. All the sudden in the midst of this call, she suddenly said, "David, here what the spirit says to you, make thy name known, make thy name known, get the book done or you're going to have to start over from the beginning".

When she first said this to me, I argued with her, asking, "how am I going to do that when nobody reads the books"? Yes, this was 10 months after the 2nd book was published, so I was already getting tired of being rejected. But at the same time, the excitement started to grow. After getting off the phone with her, I started thinking about our conversation. She said, "hear what the spirit says to you"". Who or what is the spirit.

> God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:24)

Yes, I just received a direct commandment from the Father through this servant and or vessel of God. But this time it was a little different, I was told to make my name known. So, I immediately started to think that this must be when He was going to reveal me. Needless to say, the book was originally published August 15th, 2019. Yes, I had already started the book, but now I needed to get it done quickly, so it didn't take to long after I received the commandment. Shortly after the book was published, I went to a casino. Something I usually do after each publication of a book that we have written. I sat down to play Criss Cross poker with a few other players at the table. Once the other players left the table, and I was sitting there by myself, the dealer asked me what my name was. I told her David and then she replied, "oh, because I am supposed to say Jesus is here". Oh boy, did my adrenaline start to pump, I thought for sure that meant I was getting ready to be revealed

But it didn't take me too long to figure out that nobody was reading this one either. So, as explained in the fourth book, I booked what I thought was just going to be a vacation for Maui, Hawaii in November of that year. Just time to get away from everything. But about a week before the flight there, the Father told me that I wasn't going for pleasure, I was being sent.

So, without giving all the details again, this is when I saw that spiritual flood that covers the earth today. Yes, I seen this flood on my flight there. So, with now seeing this, and thinking about what that dealer said at the casino, I really started to think that maybe I named the third book, Jesus Christ in the flesh, incorrectly. But I knew that I had to write another. And now I was starting to wonder as to why I hadn't been revealed yet, or whether I was not making my name known in the right way. Yea, I did make my name known, yet maybe I named the third book wrong. And yes, I was freaking out from seeing this flood that is covering the earth today. Either way, I just wrote another book, Jesus is here and also put the third book inside the fourth book. I was thinking that surely this has to be it.

> Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

Yes, this flood that I saw from 32,000 feet on my way to Maui Hawaii, November 4th 2019 is also called Egypt. This flood also serves as the water that surrounds a child while it is in the womb. This was explained in the fourth book or precept. This was me breaking the water just it happens when a woman goes into labor. I broke the water when I was looking at it from above. I was outside the womb. Could this be when I became the firstborn?

> A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. (John 16:21)

This takes me back to thinking about me becoming the firstborn when I am revealed. Those that truly fear the Father and seek His righteousness, will rejoice when they find out that I am here and am giving an understanding of our Father through these books.

This is where we need to add a little mind storming, and yes, this is being added after originally writing this segment in this book. As I was driving today and listening to the Bible, I started wondering about a couple things concerning this idea about me being revealed in February. Then I realized that the book of Revelation also talks about times, a time, and a half a time.

> And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon,

having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabiters of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and

> half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:1-17)

I have been telling you all in all the books except the first, that I am in hard core, one on one, hands on training with the Father. So, I got to thinking about how in the previous books, when the earth swallowed up the water, I commented on thinking that this was Noah's flood, as man calls it. But then I got to thinking about the time I seen the spiritual flood that covers the earth today, that I saw from 32,000 feet. Then when I stopped for the day, I got to reading this chapter and something dawned on me. Let us listen to the first part of this chapter again.

> And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And

> the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. (Revelation 12:1-6)

In previous books, when I used to think that I was the returning Jesus, I stated that when this child of God was caught up God was the first Jesus. And as stated in the last book, this was the hardest concept for the Father to get through my thick skull. But there was no Jesus here before me because if there was, the resurrection would be past already. Now that I look at this with more trained spiritual eyes, I can correlate this with my own life. I was called to the Bible in 2011, 400 years after the King James Bible was published. I heard Moses and the prophets and believed everything. Then woke up on my 45th birthday, knowing what and how to write the first book, Precept one, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. This book was published in April of 2015. Then I went out into the wilderness March 8th of 2016 after giving everything I owned away to the poor and needy.

This was me being born again as explained in the previous books. Did you hear how the scriptures teach she brought forth a man child? I was born on that day. Then the 40 days and nights of fasting as explained in the third and fourth books. Then it was just me and the Father while I started my hard core, hands on, one on one training. Then I was in Israel and just got baptized by water in the Jorden River when I finished the second book manuscript. Then it was published a thousand two hundred and threescore days. Or three and a half years, or a times, a time, and a half of a time, after the first book was published.

As shown in the last book, our mother is the spiritual woman shown in,

> And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And

> upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. (Revelation 17:4-5)

Then I was wondering, if the Father is going to reveal me on February 11th, does that mean the five months of torment start?

> And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months. (Revelation 9:1-10)

We showed you all this in the fifth book, Precept five, At midnight I will rise. It will be just like the days of Noah when I am revealed. Yes, everything will continue to go as it is now, but the waters were on the earth for five months in the flood of Noah, so this is what it will be like when I am revealed. But is that as soon as I am revealed, or will I be revealed during this time? Is that when I become the firstborn.

But then I was thinking about how we will not be told when something bad is getting ready to happen to us, or that would give us a chance to keep away from what is coming. Let me speak through the scriptures so that what I am trying to say, makes more sence.

> Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. (Matthew 24::42-44)

Yes, this is also in the chapter that is telling us of the signs of the times of the end of the world, but is also telling us that we cannot know when something bad is going to happen, like your house getting robbed. And we all know that there is absolutely no way of me or anyone else knowing the date of the end of the world.

> But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32)

So, now I am thinking maybe this date has nothing to do with the revealing of me. Then I start thinking about a couple of other things that it could mean. I mean, it does say 2300 days that the sanctuary will be cleansed. Well, where does the Bible talk about the cleansing of the sanctuary.

He cried also in mine ears with a loud voice, saying, Cause them that have charge over the city to draw near, even every man with his destroying weapon in his hand. And, behold, six men came from the way of the higher gate, which lieth toward the north, and every man a slaughter weapon in his hand; and one man among them was clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side: and they went in, and stood beside the brasen altar. And the glory of the God of Israel was gone up from the cherub, whereupon he was, to the threshold of the house. And he called to the man clothed with linen, which had the writer's inkhorn by his side; And the Lord said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof. And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house. And he said unto them, Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city. And it came to pass, while they were slaying them, and I was left, that I fell upon my face, and cried, and said, Ah Lord God! wilt thou destroy all the residue of Israel in thy pouring out of thy fury upon Jerusalem? Then said he unto me, The iniquity of the house of Israel and Judah is exceeding great, and the land is full of blood, and the city full of perverseness: for they say, The Lord hath forsaken the earth, and the Lord seeth not. And as for me also, mine eye shall not

> spare, neither will I have pity, but I will recompense their way upon their head. And, behold, the man clothed with linen, which had the inkhorn by his side, reported the matter, saying, I have done as thou hast commanded me. (Ezekiel 9:1-11)

When we listen to what this is saying, it does kind of line up what we read in Revelation 9 and the five months of torment. Let me remind you all that I showed you a picture of the cross on the middle of my forehead in the fourth book, Precept four, Jesus is here. Did you hear how God said to put a mark on the foreheads of the men that have sighed and cried? And they are after cried? Did you hear that these men are not to hurt anyone that has a mark and has sighed and cried for the abominations that be done in the midst thereof? I have been writing and warning of these abominations for years. And that cross appeared on my forehead in the latter part of 2014, and it wasn't put there by me. This also lines up with what we are told here.

> And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will give unto Gog a place there of graves in Israel, the valley of the passengers on the east of the sea: and it shall stop the noses of the passengers: and there shall they bury Gog and all his multitude: and they shall call it The valley of Hamongog. And seven months shall the house of Israel be burying of them, that they may cleanse the land. Yea, all the people of the land shall bury them; and it shall be to them a renown the day that I shall be glorified, saith the Lord God. And they shall sever out men of continual employment, passing through the land to bury with the passengers those that remain upon the face of the earth, to cleanse it: after the end of seven months shall they search. And the passengers that pass through the land, when any seeth a man's bone, then shall he set up a sign by it, till the buriers have buried it in the valley of Hamongog.

> And also the name of the city shall be Hamonah. Thus shall they cleanse the land. (Ezekiel 39:11-16)

But this also lines up with not knowing when bad is coming. And because I am always thinking of the Father and the scriptures, I started to wonder if this could be when I receive the powers or will I start feeling the virtue of God.

> And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me. (Luke 8:46)

In other words, could this be when I start to be able to do the miracles that we all have read and heard about Jesus doing? Because as we have been showing, Jesus was not here in the past, rather I am the guy you have been reading about and all that you think he did in the past, is what I will be doing in the near future. To me, this sounds more likely than the idea of me being revealed.

Then I got to thinking there is one other possibility. Could this be the when our Father pours out His spirit on everybody. I mean, this is something that we did talk about in the last book we wrote.

> And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke: (Acts 2:17-19)

> And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: And

> also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and terrible day of the Lord come. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the Lord hath said, and in the remnant whom the Lord shall call. (Joel 2:28-32)

Now this makes more sense to me. I am more inclined to think that this could be what is going to happen in February. Yes, this will lead to the sanctuary being cleansed because one the Father starts pouring out His spirit, many will be having all this knowledge that I have been sharing throughout these books, put into their consciences at once, or in a very short time. This will lead to many that will have their consciences seared with a hot iron.

> Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving: For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer. (1 Timothy 4:1-5)

I think when the Father starts to pour out His spirit, then it is more likely that I will then be able to do the miracles that I am said

to do. And at the same time, when He starts to pour out His spirit is when many will wonder if their names are written in the book of life.

> The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. (Revelation 17:8-9)

We have shown you all that man is the beast that has seven heads. The seven heads are the seven continents of the earth. So, when the Father starts to pour out His spirit, man or Satan will realize that he has but a short time and then Satan will be loosed, or panic sets in for a short time.

> And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not

> again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. (Revelation 20:1-8)

Not only will I be able to perform the miracles that we all have read about, but I think this is when I will be talking or teaching the multitudes of people. I truly believe that I will be going back to the Philippines to fulfill many of the things done on or around ships and seas. But there are things that I will be fulfilling here because if February 11th is when the Father starts to pour out His spirit, I will still be here in the United States.

Now can you understand why I continue to say the King James Version of the Bible is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today. In previous books, I would always say it is not just a book of the past. But now I am more inclined to say that the Father had these holy men write what they wrote, not by their own will, just for our instructions on how we are to live our lives today.

When these men wrote what they wrote, they were only being told what to write. They were not writing of events that they witnessed. I am going to give an example of a couple things I have wrote in the books, that had the same effect. In the original publication of the third book, on the 9th page, I said everybody needed to let down their guard, humble themselves, because this is going to be a very devastating time for the world. That book was published on August 15th of 2019. As we all know, 6 months later, Covid -19 ravished through the world. I didn't know what was coming, I was just told to say that in the introduction of that book. And as we all know, Covid-19 was a very

devastating time for the whole world, in fact, some of the world is still feeling the pain from this.

Now we are going to be talking about something that I put in the seventh book. In the chapter The first death, on page 261 of the paperback, I said something in the regards to the last trump is running for office and I wasn't sure if the trumpet would sound while he was running for office, or after he got into the office. Yes, I am referring to our previous and next president. That manuscript was sent to the publisher on February 5th of 2024. So, I can safely say I wrote that just a month before I sent it in. How did I know? It surly wasn't because of something I witnessed.

Now we are going to talk about the fifth book or precept, At midnight I will rise. This book was inspired because I heard about them moving the Doomsday clock closer to midnight. No, man has no idea what they are looking for, but at the same time, I look at everything through spiritual eyes, so this caught my attention. This inspired me to tell everyone that we are reigning with Christ now because we all make up the One Son of God. We all have different roles to fulfill. This book also showed that we are living in the Sabbath day now. Just think about it, what happens at midnight? The end of the day. So, at midnight, the sabbath day ends.

This is also the book I was in the process of writing when the incident happened in the truck. I passed out while I was driving and wound up putting the truck in the ditch on the opposite side of the interstate. Nobody else was involved, nor did I hit anything. But I was terminated for medical reasons. I was weighing close to 240 pounds back then. I knew my blood pressure was almost to the point of being to high to drive. To put it bluntly, I stopped taking care of myself because I was ready to die, and I knew that I couldn't be with a woman again, so I figured, why bother.

As I have told you all in previous books, I do not go to doctors other than for a mandated biannual DOT physical. So, I listened to my conscience in which told me to start taking some certain supplements and got a local job in which caused me to lose 60 pounds in four months. I got my blood pressure better than it had ever been

before and was feeling better about everything. I got recertified or got a DOT physical stating that I was all clear to drive again. Then when the people I was staying with put up holiday decorations, I immediately started calling companies to go back over the road.

The company I am with today called me before I had a chance to call them. As explained in the 6th book, this is the company that our Father used to get me to realize that I am sitting on His right side in the heavenly places. First, the blue and white truck, then the blue and white clothes came about. So, when you see me, you see the same colors you seen when you look into the sky on a clear, or partly cloudy day, or the heavens. Could this be when I became the firstborn?

This is also the book that was inspired by Livia, one of the workers at Urlink, not the company that Mary had worked for. She called me one day after they created the website. She told me that she had a dream, and in this dream, she saw the website, but she seen a spot for a 6th book. At that time, I had no intentions of writing another, but because I know our Father gives us our instructions while we sleep, in a dream, I knew that this was Him telling me, through Livia, to write another.

> For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. (Job 33:14-17)

This is the book that we really started to show that our Father has always been telling us the He has been declaring the end from the beginning. Meaning that if a person misunderstands the book of Genesis, there is no way of being able to understand the rest of the King James Version of the Bible. Once I wrote this book, I really allowed my imagination to tell me that it was time for the Father to reveal me, so I stopped listening to the Bible as frequently. I probably

only listened to it five times in that year. That book was published on October 10, 2023.

The sixth book wasn't even available to the public when Israel got attacked on October 7th that year. When that happened, I pretty much knew right away that there was another book coming. The Father told me to go to Alaska to get a picture for the cover of the book. Well, that wound up only being part of it. Then as I was in the middle of going there, I got the commandment to fly my brother up there with me. And a lot of the knowledge in that book, came from my brother being there.

Then while writing that book, the Father and I started to have real time live conversations that are written as they went. Could this be when I became the firstborn? This is also the book where the Father told me that I was now living back in the Garden of Eden. In my view, I am the first to be back in the Garden, so wouldn't that make me the firstborn? This is also where the Father had me show everyone that we were all here on the first day of creation, and that is was our imagination, "the serpent, the devil, or Satan" that got us kicked out of the Garden. We also show how I spend time in heaven every day now, and I make my bed in hell every day. This book revealed more secrets than any of the other ones.

I don't really think this chapter shows a lot of new information. I think I did this chapter just because this is something that I wonder about often, ever since He had me put The Firstborn with giving an understanding underneath it. Am I the firstborn or is that something that is to come. I want to say I become the firstborn once I am revealed, and the sanctuary is cleansed. Or that is what I am thinking anyway, or did I become the firstborn during anyone of these events that got me to write each book? Or did I become the firstborn when I walked out into the wilderness back on March 8th of 2016? Is that why the Father has been teaching all that He has? Because I do know for a fact, that is when David Jenkins spiritually died.

After thinking that I was done with this chapter and completing a few others, the Father brought something up. I was thinking I was going to do another chapter for this topic, then I started to think

maybe at the end of Living in Satan's kingdom or world, but then I made the final decision to place it here because it just fits with me being the firstborn.

I must say that I truly hope you have read the last books, or precepts. We are talking about how I am the first to raise from the dead. Yes, this is what happened when the Father had me show everyone in the last book, I am living in the Garden of Eden. This was explained in the chapter, The first death. See we all got kicked out of heaven, and Great Red Dragon, or Satan, drew a third of the starts with him. Well we came from the stars that he brought with him. Just to recap, I feel I need to show where Satan drew a third of the stars.

> And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and

> Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. (Revelation 12:1-9)

This happened in the past and had to happen before the world for man-kind could exist. So, just for a recap on how we are the waters that God hovered over on the first day of creation, we are going to post this entire chapter. And when you get towards the end, verse fifteen, but you wont see the verse number, you will notice that the people of all nations are water.

> And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns. The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the

> bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. (Revelation 17:1-18)

As shown in the last book, or precept, the woman talked about in the chapter is the Father's spiritual wife, and our spiritual mother. Remember that we must worship God is spirit and truth. If He is a

spirit as noted in John 4, then everything that He commanded the holy men to write, must be spiritual.

> But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

And yes, she is the one that conceived the Son of God without having sex with anyone. She had all of us as a virgin. But we covered that in the last book, so now we need to recap on we were all called Adam in the beginning. Yes, male and female were called Adam.

> This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created. (Genesis 5:1-2)

Yes, the waters that God hovered over on the first day of creation was all the people of the world, male and female. This is also where it really helps if you have read the fourth book, or precept and beyond, so that you can understand reincarnation. Yes, it is very real and the Father said the covenant is good for a thousand generations, or a thousand lives. Now I want to draw your attention to when Jesus said, "let the dead bury the dead".

> And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

> But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead. (Matthew 8:19-22)

Now we need to listen to when Adam and Eve got kicked out of the Garden of Eden.

> Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou

gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a

> flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:1-24)

Yes, the serpent is the imagination in each person on the planet, as explained in the last book, or precept. For the powers of heaven shall be shaken. But notice how God said that we would return to the ground because of us eating from the tree in the midst of the Garden. Before we got kicked out of the Garden we had eternal life with the Father. But beings how we allowed our imagination to convince us that we would not die if we ate from the tree, we were sentenced to death. So, since the beginning, everybody that has been living with a beating heart, red blood pumping throughout their body, and breathing oxygen, has been living while we have been dead. Dead in a spiritual realm, not a physical realm, and that is how the dead are able to bury the dead. It is not physically dead, it is spiritually dead.

This is where we realize that I am the first to rise from the dead, or the firstborn to be living back into the Garden of Eden in which I have eternal life. I am the first on the planet to understand our Father, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. This is where it is going to be very important for any and all to get an understanding of our Father because anyone without an understanding will remain in the congregation of the dead.

> The man that wandereth out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead. He that loveth pleasure shall be a poor man: he that loveth wine and oil shall not be rich. The wicked shall be a ransom for the righteous, and the transgressor for the upright. It is better to dwell in the wilderness, than with a contentious and an angry woman. There is treasure to be desired and oil in the dwelling of the wise; but a foolish man spendeth it up. He that followeth after righteousness and mercy findeth life, righteousness, and honour. (Proverbs 21:16-21)

> When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, and set them on fire: for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will shew them no favour. (Isaiah 27:11)

But here is where the problem is. There are so many that have ignored our Father by refusing to listen to what He has said in the Old Testament. If you haven't heard Moses and the prophets, you will not be persuaded that I have risen from the dead.

> For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:28-31)

And if you do not believe the writings of Moses, sad to say, your not going to believe my words.

> I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words? (John 5:43-47)

Here is the good news though, even if you have ignored the Father, you are reading this and you are starting to hear His voice. Because I only speak of His magnificence. And you are starting to believe. That is why He constantly tells us His hand is stretched out still.

> Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the Lord of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel. Therefore is the anger of the Lord kindled against his people, and he hath stretched forth his hand against them, and hath smitten them: and the hills did tremble, and their carcases were torn in the midst of the streets. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 5:24-25)

> Therefore the Lord shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.

> For wickedness burneth as the fire: it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall eat every man the flesh of his own arm: Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: and they together shall be against Judah. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:11-21)

> Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed; To turn aside the needy from judgment, and to take away the right from the poor of my people, that widows may be their prey, and that they may rob the fatherless! And what will ye do in the day of visitation, and in the desolation which shall come from far? to whom will ye flee for help? and where will ye leave your glory? Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 10:1-4)

After learning all that we did in this chapter, we can know that we are getting very close to when our Father starts pouring out His wrath, or better yet, taking vengeance on all those that do not want Him in their lives. That is why He is telling us it is time to repent.

> And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:30)

I am going to say this is the time to wake up and rise from the dead.

> And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. (Romans 13:11)

> Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. (Ephesians 5:14)

As you can now hear and see, this is not the physically dead arising, it is all that are asleep not knowing the times we are in, and spiritually rising from the dead.

LIVING IN SATAN'S KINGDOM, OR WORLD!

Yes, this chapter is going to be showing how everybody is living in Satan's world. We are going to start this chapter off with something the Father brought to my attention as I was driving yesterday. I had a conversation with someone earlier in the day yesterday, and in this conversation, this person said that I couldn't be Jesus. They said this because I won't change my perfect Father, nor would I tell this person they can do as they please and still be saved. Yes, this person claimed to want to repent, but refused to change anything in their life.

Then as I am driving, the Father asked me, when was the Bible published? So, I decided that I would do a quick google search to see when this was, when I got parked. Don't get me wrong, I know the King James Version of the Bible was published in 1611. 400 years before the Father called me to the Bible as explained in previous books. But I also know that this isn't the first bible published. So, let us see what I first found.

> When Was the Bible Assembled? - Learn Religions
>
> Nov 6, 2024 · We can say with some certainty that the first widespread edition of the Bible was assembled by St. Jerome around A.D. 400. This manuscript included all 39 books of the Old Testament and 27 books of the New … Tags:The BibleSam O'neal Global web icon Bible Topics http://www.bibletopics.com › biblestudy The History of the English Bible - Bible Topics

> Thus, the first complete English Bible was printed on October 4, 1535, and is known as the Coverdale Bible. John Rogers went on to print the second complete English Bible in 1537. Explore this imageExplore this imageExplore this image Global web icon Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org›wiki›Bible

As you can see, I left the website where I got this information so that you can see that I am not making anything up. Here is why I decided to google it. When the Father asked me of this, He also asked me how can her timeline make logic knowing what you know about the Bible David? My immediate thought is, it can't. My reply was, just as you had me show in the last book, there is no such thing as BC and AD. I was never here before Father as you tell everyone in Hebrews 9.

> For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

As we have shown, if I was here in the past, why is the world still here? I only appear once in the end of the world. Then He ask me, why did I tell the holy men to write what they wrote. My reply is so that we could learn from what they wrote as we have shown them Father.

> For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:21)

> For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15:4)

So, this got me to wondering about the timeline that people have come up with. Let us look at just one.

Bible Timeline

473 rows · Timeline based on traditionally accepted timeframes and general …

BEFORE TIME IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE WORD JOHN 1

Before 4000 BC The Creation Genesis 1

Before 4000 BC The Garden of Eden Genesis 2

Before 4000 BC The Fall of Man Genesis 3

Before 3000 BC Cain kills Abel Genesis 4

See all 473 rows on biblehub.com

Tags: History of The BibleBible ChronologyDetailed Biblical Timeline. Explore this imageExplore this imageExplore this image Global web icon All That's Interesting https://allthatsinteresting.com›when-was …

Now I know we have shown searches in previous books showing that there are cave drawings and such from well over 10,000 years ago or so, so how could this timeline match up. They have found proof that the earth is actually over 4 billion years old.

> 35,400 to 51,200 years The oldest cave paintings in the world are found in Indonesia and date back at least 35,400 to 51,200 years12345. These paintings are often constructed from hand stencils and simple

> geometric shapes4. The Archaeologist https://www.thearchaeologist.org›blog›ten-oldest...

I guess these drawings must have just magically appeared with nobody to put them there. As we showed you all, when the holy men wrote the scriptures, they didn't write by their own will, but spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

> For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:21)

Remember how we have been showing you all that God the Father is declaring the end from the beginning.

> Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: (Isaiah 46:9-10)

Now remember how we showed you all in the last book, For the powers of heaven shall be shaken, that a lot of the scriptures are getting ready to come into play for us in our lifetimes? Yes, the scriptures are the heavens that are getting ready to be shaken, because of our all-knowing and powerful Father. He had these men write what they wrote, so we would know what to expect in our lifetimes. The 400 years of silence, as man calls it, came between the time the King James Version of the Bible was -published and when I was called to the Bible in 2011. We talked about this more in the last book, so I do not want to repeat it anymore.

Now we are going to be diving into the chapter, and yes, we will be painting a picture in your mind as you read. We will be talking about things brought up in previous books, but not showing

everything again. First thing I want to do is remind everybody that we must worship God in spirit.

> But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

God is a spirit, so the entire Bible is spiritual workings. Remember God is declaring the end from the beginning, so we need to think about when we first got here. To know this, we need to know who our mother is.

> And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. (Revelation 17:4-5)

There she is and this is also our Father's spiritual wife. The woman that conceived the Son of God without ever having sex with anyone. And that is everybody on the planet as we have shown in several of the previous books. We all were cast here with Satan, or Lucifer because we all thought we could obtain perfection by doing things differently than our perfect Father's ways.

> And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon,

> having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. (Revelation 12:1-4)

I have shown you all in previous books, the seven heads are the seven continents on the earth. We showed you all in the last book, we came from the stars. Those are the mansions in my Father's house. Now we must go all the way back to the first day of creation.

> In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1-5)

That light that He created on the first day, is Him breathing life into man so that man became a living soul.

> And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)

Without showing it again, He did not create the sun, moon, and the starts until the fourth day. Now let us see that this light is not a physical light, rather it is in our hearts.

> For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. (2 Corinthians 6:6)

> But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. (1 Thessalonians 5:1-5)

Did you notice how the Day and Night are capitalized on the first day of creation? And I want to point out that God created man and female and called them Adam. It wasn't just one man.

> This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created. (Genesis 5:1-2)

Because we all came here with Satan, we are all counted as Satan. As we have shown, one man can represent many, or many can represent one.

> Behold, ye are all children of Israel; give here your advice and counsel.And all the people arose as one man, saying, We will not any of us go to his tent, neither will we any of us turn into his house. (Judges 20:7-8)

> And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehamiah 8:1)

> My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. (James 2:1-11)

We all, as one, thought we could obtain our Father's perfection by doing things differently than His ways. We all have transgressed

His law. Now that we all were cast here in the beginning, we need to realize that we are in hell now.

> And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 10:28)

> The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath. (Proverbs 15::24)

Do you all remember how I showed you all how I ascend up into heaven, or make my bed in hell? The scriptures are a level of heaven. And I will ask this again, how can God destroy both your soul and body in hell if you are not in hell now? And how can we depart hell beneath if we are not there? This would have to say something in the regards of the way of life is above so that you don't get sent to hell. But it doesn't so, it must mean we are in hell now. Remember their conversations are above, so the only way to get out of hell is to seek all of the scriptures.

> For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

The more time we spend listening to the scriptures, we spiritually elevate to the heavens because our mind continually meditates on the scriptures. As shown in the last book, when I decide not to listen to the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible daily, I decend down into hell. Remember this is all spiritual. Now listen to this.

> They have not known nor understood: for he hath shut their eyes, that they cannot see; and their hearts, that they cannot understand. And none considereth in his heart, neither is there knowledge nor understanding to say, I have burned part of it in the fire; yea, also

> I have baked bread upon the coals thereof; I have roasted flesh, and eaten it: and shall I make the residue thereof an abomination? shall I fall down to the stock of a tree? (Isaih 44:18-19)

As we have pointed out in several previous books, we all walk through a spiritual fire every day. This is why we are told not to love the world or the ways of the world.

> Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. (1 John 2:15-17)

> And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Romans 12:2)

> If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. (Colossians 3:1-2)

As you can see and hear, we are not to love the world, or the ways of the world. We are not to be conformed to this world. And we are to set our affection on things above and not on the earth. This is all because the earth is hell and that is where we live. But now we need to be thinking about the prince or the power of the air, and how he affects us.

> Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: (Ephesians 2:2)

We have already established that this is hell, so let us listen to when we are told this is Satan's kingdom

> And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. (Matthew 12:25-28)

We kind of showed this in the last book, in the chapter called, Exorcisms. When one reads these books or allows me to teach them without them constantly telling me I am wrong, I will cast the demons out of you. But if one continues in the ways of this world, the demons, or the devil will not flee from you.

> Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. (James 4:7)

So, now we need to be thinking about how the prince of the power of the air causes so many to be disobedient. And in order to do this, we need to once again, go back to the beginning. But now we are going to be listening to when the serpent beguiled Eve. But first let me show you all that the serpent, the devil, and or Satan are the same spirit.

> And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. (Revelation 12:9)

> And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, (Revelation 20:2)

Now that we can see that they are all the same spirit, we can go back to the beginning.

> Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. (Genesis 3:1-6)

Notice how we are told that the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field. I have heard so many people refer to this as a snake. Let me remind you that a snake is a beast of the field and God did say the serpent was more subtil than any beast. So, what could this be? Let us listen to how Satan and God seem to communicate.

> Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. (Job 1:6-7)

> Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the Lord. And the Lord said unto Satan, From whence comest thou? And Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. (Job 2:1-2)

Now we all know that we are the temple of God, right?

> Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? (1 Corinthians 3:16)

> And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. (2 Corinthians 6:16)

But wait a second, who else sits in the temple of God?

> Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and

> that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. (2 Thessalonnians 2:4)

Who is it that exalteth himself above all?

> How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. (Isaiah 14:12-14)

Now I want to take some time so that we can listen to a few times we can hear that people listen to their imagination instead of listening to God.

> But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward. (Jeremiah 7:23-24)

> And the Lord saith, Because they have forsaken my law which I set before them, and have not obeyed my voice, neither walked therein; But have walked after the imagination of their own heart, and after Baalim, which their fathers taught them: Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will

> feed them, even this people, with wormwood, and give them water of gall to drink. (Jeremiah 9:13-15)
>
> Thus saith the Lord, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem. This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing. (Jeremiah 13:9-10)
>
> Lest there should be among you man, or woman, or family, or tribe, whose heart turneth away this day from the Lord our God, to go and serve the gods of these nations; lest there should be among you a root that beareth gall and wormwood; And it come to pass, when he heareth the words of this curse, that he bless himself in his heart, saying, I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst: The Lord will not spare him, but then the anger of the Lord and his jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses that are written in this book shall lie upon him, and the Lord shall blot out his name from under heaven. (Deuteronomy 29:18-20)

So, now let us listen to what happened to Adam and Eve when they heard God in the garden.

> And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the

Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord

> God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:7-24)

Now I want to just say this, and not show the verses for they have been shown in other books. But there are 15 verses that tell us to be sober, sober minded, or to think soberly in the New Testament. There are 30 verses that mention the word conscience, with a couple of those verses mentioning the conscience more than once. That is because that is half of the battle. But now I want to do a quick google search to show how much of the brain makes up our imagination.

> Imagination does not reside in a single part of the brain. Instead, it emerges from the interplay of multiple brain regions and networks. Global web icon Scientific American https://www.scientificamerican.com›article›where...

How did Adam and Eve hear God the Father? They heard Him with their conscience. It was their imagination that told them they could eat from the tree of life. We just showed how God is against those that do not listen to Him, and listen to their imagination of their heart. The imagination does not listen to Him and all that He commands. Remember His law is perfect.

> The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. (Psalm 19:7)

So, why did Adam and Eve get kicked out of the Garden? Because they listened to their imagination, and not the perfect law of the Father. Now I am going to show one complete chapter that shows this tree of life that we are not to eat from.

> And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is clovenfooted, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat. Nevertheless these shall ye not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the hoof: as the camel, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the coney, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the hare, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you. Of their flesh shall ye not eat, and their carcase shall ye not touch; they are unclean to you. These shall ye eat of all that are in the waters: whatsoever hath fins and scales in the waters, in the seas, and in the rivers, them shall ye eat. And all that have not fins and scales in the seas, and in the rivers, of all that move in the waters, and of any living thing which is in the waters, they shall be an abomination unto you: They shall be even an abomination unto you; ye shall not eat of their flesh, but ye shall have their carcases in abomination. Whatsoever hath no fins nor scales in the waters, that shall be an abomination unto you. And these are they which ye shall have in abomination among the fowls; they shall not be eaten, they are an abomination: the eagle, and the ossifrage, and the ospray, And the

vulture, and the kite after his kind; Every raven after his kind; And the owl, and the night hawk, and the cuckow, and the hawk after his kind, And the little owl, and the cormorant, and the great owl, And the swan, and the pelican, and the gier eagle, And the stork, the heron after her kind, and the lapwing, and the bat. All fowls that creep, going upon all four, shall be an abomination unto you. Yet these may ye eat of every flying creeping thing that goeth upon all four, which have legs above their feet, to leap withal upon the earth; Even these of them ye may eat; the locust after his kind, and the bald locust after his kind, and the beetle after his kind, and the grasshopper after his kind. But all other flying creeping things, which have four feet, shall be an abomination unto you. And for these ye shall be unclean: whosoever toucheth the carcase of them shall be unclean until the even. And whosoever beareth ought of the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even. The carcases of every beast which divideth the hoof, and is not clovenfooted, nor cheweth the cud, are unclean unto you: every one that toucheth them shall be unclean. And whatsoever goeth upon his paws, among all manner of beasts that go on all four, those are unclean unto you: whoso toucheth their carcase shall be unclean until the even. And he that beareth the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even: they are unclean unto you. These also shall be unclean unto you among the creeping things that creep upon the earth; the weasel, and the mouse, and the tortoise after his kind, And the ferret, and the chameleon, and the lizard, and the snail, and the mole. These are unclean to you among all that creep: whosoever doth touch them, when they be dead, shall be unclean until the even. And upon

whatsoever any of them, when they are dead, doth fall, it shall be unclean; whether it be any vessel of wood, or raiment, or skin, or sack, whatsoever vessel it be, wherein any work is done, it must be put into water, and it shall be unclean until the even; so it shall be cleansed. And every earthen vessel, whereinto any of them falleth, whatsoever is in it shall be unclean; and ye shall break it. Of all meat which may be eaten, that on which such water cometh shall be unclean: and all drink that may be drunk in every such vessel shall be unclean. And every thing whereupon any part of their carcase falleth shall be unclean; whether it be oven, or ranges for pots, they shall be broken down: for they are unclean and shall be unclean unto you. Nevertheless a fountain or pit, wherein there is plenty of water, shall be clean: but that which toucheth their carcase shall be unclean. And if any part of their carcase fall upon any sowing seed which is to be sown, it shall be clean. But if any water be put upon the seed, and any part of their carcase fall thereon, it shall be unclean unto you. And if any beast, of which ye may eat, die; he that toucheth the carcase thereof shall be unclean until the even. And he that eateth of the carcase of it shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even: he also that beareth the carcase of it shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even. And every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth shall be an abomination; it shall not be eaten. Whatsoever goeth upon the belly, and whatsoever goeth upon all four, or whatsoever hath more feet among all creeping things that creep upon the earth, them ye shall not eat; for they are an abomination. Ye shall not make yourselves abominable with any creeping thing that creepeth, neither shall ye make yourselves unclean with them, that ye should be defiled thereby. For I

> am the Lord your God: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. For I am the Lord that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I am holy. This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth: To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten. (Leviticus 11:1-47)

Yes, there is the tree of life that we are not to eat from in the midst of the garden. Now we are going to learn why it is so important to live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. As we have shown, the scriptures were inspired by God for our learning. The holy men did not write by their own will but were being told what to write. This is the King James Version of the Bible. So actually, it was God the Father that wrote the Bible. The unclean things are the tree of life that we are not to eat from. We can know this just by listening to these two sections of the Bible.

> I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name. I have spread out my hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts; A people that provoketh me to anger continually to my face; that sacrificeth in gardens, and burneth incense upon altars of brick; Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels; Which say, Stand by thyself, come not near to me; for I am

holier than thou. These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burneth all the day. (Isaiah 65:1-5)

He that killeth an ox is as if he slew a man; he that sacrificeth a lamb, as if he cut off a dog's neck; he that offereth an oblation, as if he offered swine's blood; he that burneth incense, as if he blessed an idol. Yea, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations. I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not. Hear the word of the Lord, ye that tremble at his word; Your brethren that hated you, that cast you out for my name's sake, said, Let the Lord be glorified: but he shall appear to your joy, and they shall be ashamed. A voice of noise from the city, a voice from the temple, a voice of the Lord that rendereth recompence to his enemies. Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children. Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? saith the Lord: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut the womb? saith thy God.10 Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her: That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory. For thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream:

> then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees. As one whom his mother comforteth, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. And when ye see this, your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb: and the hand of the Lord shall be known toward his servants, and his indignation toward his enemies. For, behold, the Lord will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire. For by fire and by his sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of the Lord shall be many. They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the Lord. (Isaiah 66:3-17)

Did you see and hear how people sanctify themselves behind the one tree in the midst. Remember Adam and Eve were told not to eat from the tree in the midst of the garden. How many people today listen to their imagination and think that it is okay to eat the unclean? I could list several other areas in which we are told to make a difference between clean and unclean, but this has been talked about in several of the previous books, starting with the second. Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. So, let us not think about other ways people listen to their imaginations, and not every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

How many people read or listen to other versions of the Bible than the King James? Isn't it the imagination of people that want to write these bibles so that they can make it say what they want it to say? Oh, I can't understand the King James Version of the Bible. It is to hard to understand. Well, let me remind you all, I only have a 9th grade education, and I understand it very well. Because that is the only Bible I listen to. I live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God, and I refuse to allow my imagination to tell me that

I should seek Him somewhere else. And through these 8 books now that we have written, the world can see the benefits of only listening to Him and all that He has to say.

Now I want to look at this one verse again.

> For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

This verse alone tells everybody that I was not here before. If I were, this world would not be here today. But people allow their imaginations to tell them I was here before, so now they allow their imagination to tell them that they don't need to listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Isn't that the same thing the serpent told Eve?

Now let us listen to when we are told that the jews look for a sign.

> For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: (1 Corinthians 1:22)

> I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. (Revelation 2:9)

> Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. (Revelation 3:9)

How many people look for things that have happened in the Bible? How many people read the Bible and think that this has already happened and they have to find some kind of proof. Proof is not believing. As we showed you all in the last book, a lot of what was

written afore time, is getting ready to happen to us. The fasting for 40 days and nights, already happened with me after I was baptized with the holy ghost. That was me willingly laying down my life as explained in the third book, Jesus Christ in the flesh and beyond. A true fast, or biblical fast has nothing to do with starving yourself.

> Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; (Isaiah 58:4-9)

That happened almost 30 years after I was in the belly of the earth for 3 days and 3 nights, starting on March 28th Good Friday of 1986. Well, I was in a coma, which is next to dead. Just as it tells us that Jesus was almost 30 years old when he was baptized.

Okay, to wrap this chapter up. We have learned that we all were here on the first day of creation. We have learned that it is the

imagination of man that tells us that we need not to listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. We have learned that Satan is walking to and fro throughout the earth. Now you can understand how the god of this world has blinded the eyes of many.

> In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

So, who is the son of perdition? Man, as one, or as a whole is the son of perdition. And the only sign this wicked and adulterous generation will get is me. Because man as a whole refuses to listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

Now we need to talk about how man, or the imagination of man has completely turned some away from our Father. I recently had someone ask me if I thought it was a miracle that a church didn't burn, but everything in the surrounding area did in the Las Angels fires this year. I told her that I didn't think it was a miracle, and that I I know that our Father will send people a strong delusion so that they will believe a lie. Then she states that all those people that go to that

church praise God, so why would God send a delusion. And I said because they are not praising the Father, they are praising the god that changed my perfect Father. Now that you heard the conversation, let me show you in the scriptures of what I am talking about.

First let me remind everyone that the Father kicked me out of the man-made church back in 2011, shortly after I was baptized with water. For a better understanding of this, read Precept four Jesus is here. But I will say this, He kicked me so that I wouldn't learn the doctrine of man while He was teaching me His way. Now let us listen to when we are told that the Father will send many a strong delusion.

> Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2 Thessalonians 2:9-12)

> Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? For all those things hath mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the Lord: but to this man will I look, even to him that is poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at my word. He that killeth an ox is as if he slew a man; he that sacrificeth a lamb, as if he cut off a dog's neck; he that offereth an oblation, as if he offered swine's blood; he that burneth incense, as if he blessed an idol. Yea, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delighteth in their abominations. I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer;

> when I spake, they did not hear: but they did evil before mine eyes, and chose that in which I delighted not. (Isaiah 66:1-4)

What does the man-made church teach? They teach that Jesus is God the Father. They teach that I came here in the past and changed my perfect Father. They teach that is a good thing to celebrate holidays in which our Father never said to do. Now I want to show a couple spots that we can hear our Father say that He will not share His glory with another, but yet there are so many that want to give all the glory to Jesus and not Him

> I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

> For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God: (Exodus 24:14)

> For my name's sake will I defer mine anger, and for my praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off. Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction. For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it: for how should my name be polluted? and I will not give my glory unto another. (Isaiah 48:9-11)

Who are the man-made churches praising? It isn't the Father. So let us listen to how the earth is God's footstool and that He is making His enemies into His footstool.

> Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest? (Isaiah 66:1)

> But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool? (Hebrews 1:13)

> The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. (Psalm 110:1)

Now that we can hear the earth is God's footstool, I want to show what the Father said would happen to the serpent.

> And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. (Genesis 3:14-15)

Now we have already learned how Satan is walking to a fro through the earth, and we know that we were created from the dirt of the earth.

> And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)

Now listen to how the Father will be bruising Satan under our feet soon.

> Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. For your obedience is come

> abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil. And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen. (Romans 16:17-20)

Now we are going to listen to what man, or Satan has done in all these man-made churches which all preach the cross and have the graven image of a cross made with hands. First those that preach the cross parish foolishly.

> For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. (1 Corinthians 1:18)

Just a quick note as to why they perish foolishness. They don't look at the cross that is not made inside of each and every person on the planet. Now listen to what man has done to our Father.

> Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that

> which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. (Romans 1:21-32)

Man has taken the perfect God, or Father and changed Him into a corruptible god. That god being the false Jesus that supposedly came here in the past and did away with the perfect law. And man does this so that they can receive a corruptible crown.

> Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible. (1 Corinthians 9::24-25)

Now we want to show one of the greater abominations that man does.

> Then said he unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater

> abominations than these. And he brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east. Then he said unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, lo, they put the branch to their nose. Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them. (Ezekiel 8:15-18)

This is the last of all of the abominations that our Father is saying to Ezekiel, but now that we know that He caused the holy men to speak as they were moved by the Holy Ghost, that the Father is telling us this is the greatest of these several abominations. People put their noses to the branch. When one puts something to their nose, that tends to be all that they see. But what is the branch?

> I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. (John 15:5)

Yes, I am the vine, and man is the branch, and we have all learned that man is Satan, or the son of perdition. So, beings how many will do as I have done, I can say this, it is time to come out of the man-made church. Start listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. "King James Version of the Bible". They seek their own glory in the man-made churches and then give all the glory to another other than our Father, the creator. Now one last thing we need to show

you. People that attend man-made churches keep holy day, right? Now listen to how our Father gets quiet when one does this.

> When I remember these things, I pour out my soul in me: for I had gone with the multitude, I went with them to the house of God, with the voice of joy and praise, with a multitude that kept holyday. Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted in me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance. (Psalm 42:4-5)

Listen to what we are told people are doingwhen they keep holy day, or observe days.

> But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain. (Galatians 4:9-11)

If you continue to go to these man-made churches, you will continue to be in bondage because you choose not to listen to our Father, rather you choose to listen to man or Satan. These man-made churches teach that we should be celebrating birthdays also. There is not one person in the Bible in which we are given the day they were born on. God is not the author of confusion, He is the one that actually wrote the King James Version of the Bible, so who or what is telling people that it a good thing to celebrate birthdays?

And Christmas is supposed to be about the birth of Jesus. There is a reason that we are not told of his or my birthday. That reason being that everybody is Christ and Christ is in all.

> Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all. (Colossians 3:11)

So, every day of the year is his birthday. In fact, we are not told the date of anyone's birthday in the bible. But people listen to their imaginations and just pick one day of the year. On more about this, read For the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

FEARING GOD, THE FATHER

We are adding this chapter because the Father has been putting it on my conscience that we need to do a chapter on this, but I wasn't sure where to put it. But as I was finishing another chapter just a bit ago, the Father told me to think about what people must do if they want to get out of hell. And the very first thing that came to mind is that you all must fear God the Father because if you do not fear Him, you will never get out of hell. And beings how we just did a chapter on how the world is Satan's kingdom, or world and this world being hell, it seems this would be a good spot to put it.

First and foremost, we need to be knowing that the fear of God is the beginning of knowledge. And without a genuine fear of God the Father, the wisdom that one gains is the wisdom that keeps people from knowing God the Father. We covered that in the last book or precept, Precept seven, For the powers of heaven shall be shaken, in the chapter, by wisdom the world knew not God.

> The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding. (Proverbs 9:10)

> The fear of the Lord is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction. (Proverbs 1:7)

> And unto man he said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil is understanding. (Job 28:28)

> Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man. (Ecclesiastes 12:13)
>
> The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do his commandments: his praise endureth for ever. (Psalm 111:10)

I am not talking about a fear of God by man's statues, rather a fear of God the Father knowing that He knows every detail about your entire life, and He can and will do with your life as He pleases. Without showing the three things again that caught my attention the first time I read the Bible, rather I will just tell you that I read how He said He would give my children to be raised by other men. Then I heard how He gives us a way to clean our teeth, and how that He would give us failing eyes. Anyone that wears glasses, contacts, or has had Lasik eye surgery has endured with failing eyes. I took all of these very personal as explained in previous books or precepts. And it was that moment that I formed a genuine fear of God the Father. And the more I read and or listen to the Bible, I still hear things that relate to my very own life. This Bible was published over 400 years ago, yet He speaks of me in this Bible, yes, I genuinely fear our Father.

This fear that we form causes us to want to know more about the King James Version of the Bible and God the Father. However, this fear does not tell us to go to every other source that we can so that we can learn what others have to say about other versions of the Bible, or what others have to say about things that they say are scriptures that have been lost or something to the sort. Such as Dead Sea Scrolls. Our Father made sure these were not in the King James Bible for a reason. This fear that we formulate is a fear that causes us to stop thinking of having material things to impress others. There are some out here that believe that the more we own, the godlier one must be.

Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort. If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses. I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Which in

> his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen. Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not highminded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy; That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate; Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life. O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen. (1 Timothy 6:1-21)

In fact, we are told to be happy with our wages. In other words, just stop chasing the dollar.

> Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then? He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise. Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do? And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you. And the

> soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages. (Luke 3 :8-14)

This fear that we form causes us to seek the Father's guidance through life in everything that we do. It does not cause us to ignore our Father and all that He is about. This fear of God the Father causes us to recognize that He does have the ultimate dominion over us and that He has total control of everything. It is a fear that causes us to realize that He is the one that brings illnesses upon us, or even those that we love.

> And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God. Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. The Lord shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn

unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in his ways. And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord; and they shall be afraid of thee. And the Lord shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers to give thee. The Lord shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them. But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. The Lord

shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. The Lord shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. The Lord will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. The Lord shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: And thou shalt grope at noonday, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and

thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand. The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up; and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed alway: So that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. The Lord shall bring thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in; for the locust shall consume it. Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail. Moreover all these curses shall come upon thee, and shall pursue thee, and overtake thee, till thou be destroyed; because thou hearkenedst not unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which he commanded thee: And they shall be upon thee for a sign and for a

wonder, and upon thy seed for ever. Because thou servedst not the Lord thy God with joyfulness, and with gladness of heart, for the abundance of all things; Therefore shalt thou serve thine enemies which the Lord shall send against thee, in hunger, and in thirst, and in nakedness, and in want of all things: and he shall put a yoke of iron upon thy neck, until he have destroyed thee. The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand; A nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor shew favour to the young: And he shall eat the fruit of thy cattle, and the fruit of thy land, until thou be destroyed: which also shall not leave thee either corn, wine, or oil, or the increase of thy kine, or flocks of thy sheep, until he have destroyed thee. And he shall besiege thee in all thy gates, until thy high and fenced walls come down, wherein thou trustedst, throughout all thy land: and he shall besiege thee in all thy gates throughout all thy land, which the Lord thy God hath given thee. And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the Lord thy God hath given thee, in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee:o that the man that is tender among you, and very delicate, his eye shall be evil toward his brother, and toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the remnant of his children which he shall leave: So that he will not give to any of them of the flesh of his children whom he shall eat: because he hath nothing left him in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee in all thy gates. The tender and delicate woman among you, which would not adventure to set the sole of her foot upon the

ground for delicateness and tenderness, her eye shall be evil toward the husband of her bosom, and toward her son, and toward her daughter, And toward her young one that cometh out from between her feet, and toward her children which she shall bear: for she shall eat them for want of all things secretly in the siege and straitness, wherewith thine enemy shall distress thee in thy gates. If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, The Lord Thy God; Then the Lord will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the Lord thy God. And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it. And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone. And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and

> shalt have none assurance of thy life: In the morning thou shalt say, Would God it were even! and at even thou shalt say, Would God it were morning! for the fear of thine heart wherewith thou shalt fear, and for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. And the Lord shall bring thee into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spake unto thee, Thou shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and no man shall buy you. (Deuteronomy 28:1-68)

As you can see and hear, I placed this entire chapter so that you could see what it will be like if we obey, but also what it will be like if we choose not to obey. So, let us think about how God will send these pestilences on you even though you might not realize that this is against you yourself. Let us think of a family that has five children. All five of these children have a different array of medical problems which include several different allergies. This causes at least one parent to constantly to be consumed with doctor visits, therapist, and making sure each of these children do not eat something that they are allergic to. This too, is what causes a spiritual extreme burning with the parents. It takes a lot of their time away because it is all drawn to their children. As explained in previous books, anything that makes you feel something other than perfect is the spiritual flames of hell to burn within you.

This is also how the Father causes the parents to eat the flesh of their sons and daughters. This too is spiritual and is not a physical eating of the flesh.

> And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. Leviticus 26:27-29)

Knowledge is also food. We have explained in previous books, the spiritual food that we are to eat is the knowledge of the Bible. So, when your children do nothing but constantly cause the parents to be chasing doctors, therapists, or any other medical needs. And those same children have several different allergies, your mind is consumed with nothing but the thoughts of your children. You are spiritually eating the flesh of your sons and daughters. And it does not matter how many medical visits one takes their children to, you won't get these pestilences to go away until you start hearkening to the Father's voice

I must confess, when I am talking about this family with five children, I am speaking of my daughter. I had to explain to her the other day of how God is causing her to eat the flesh of her sons and daughters. She too, is not one that believes the way I do, and it does say in Psalm 89 that the Father will chastise my children as well.

> I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my covenant shall stand fast with him. His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. If his children forsake my law, and walk not in my judgments; If they break my statutes, and keep not my commandments; Then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless my lovingkindness will I

> not utterly take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips. Once have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David. (Psalm 89:20-35)

Yes, I am talking about my daughter that has my mom and dad as her first two children, reincarnated. Everything I learn about the Bible is taught to me through the things I suffer. And I see how this is working on her just by watching what she goes through.

Then she also has had a boyfriend/husband living with her for the past several years. And when they got together, he had been holding a job. But a couple years into their relationship, he got to the point that he didn't want to work anymore. Maybe this wouldn't be such a bad thing if he wanted to help out more with the children, beings how three of the five children she has, are his. But when he started to get lazy, it wasn't just in the work field. Which in return, made more of a burden on my daughter. I say it made it more of a burden, because they have recently split up. Erin says if she is going to do it on her own anyway, he can no longer be there.

Now I want to talk about a little bit of a different kind of pestilence, but still with family members. When I go to my daughters, I usually spend time with Cathy and her husband. Yes, Cathy is my Ex-girlfriend/wife. And because I have known Cathy for so long, I also know her mom. Cathy tells me how her mom will come down to visit, but when she does, she does something like shopping at Cathy's house. I am not talking about coming over to borrow a couple of things. She carries a purse or bag that is quite large. Often when she comes to visit, she will put a roll of toilet paper, a few garbage bags, or a couple bags of sugar. As Cathy explains it, this wouldn't be a problem, but she does this without asking, nor telling anyone. She sneaks around about it. And the problem with that is Cathy knows and plans for certain things to last a certain amount of time. But then suddenly after a visit from her mom, she finds herself having to make

extra trips to the store because she runs out of supplies a lot sooner than expected.

I am only speaking of personal ways that the Father has taught me about these things. But I ask you to think about what in your life can be counted as a pestilence. And then seek out the answer through the Father and not by man. Man has taught people to fear God by man's precepts'

> Woe to Ariel, to Ariel, the city where David dwelt! add ye year to year; let them kill sacrifices. Yet I will distress Ariel, and there shall be heaviness and sorrow: and it shall be unto me as Ariel. And I will camp against thee round about, and will lay siege against thee with a mount, and I will raise forts against thee. And thou shalt be brought down, and shalt speak out of the ground, and thy speech shall be low out of the dust, and thy voice shall be, as of one that hath a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and thy speech shall whisper out of the dust. Moreover the multitude of thy strangers shall be like small dust, and the multitude of the terrible ones shall be as chaff that passeth away: yea, it shall be at an instant suddenly. Thou shalt be visited of the Lord of hosts with thunder, and with earthquake, and great noise, with storm and tempest, and the flame of devouring fire. And the multitude of all the nations that fight against Ariel, even all that fight against her and her munition, and that distress her, shall be as a dream of a night vision. It shall even be as when an hungry man dreameth, and, behold, he eateth; but he awaketh, and his soul is empty: or as when a thirsty man dreameth, and, behold, he drinketh; but he awaketh, and, behold, he is faint, and his soul hath appetite: so shall the multitude of all the nations be, that fight against mount Zion. Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are

> drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered. And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I cannot; for it is sealed: And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned. Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvellous work among this people, even a marvellous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. (Isaih 29:1-14)

Man teaches that fearing God is nothing to worry about. They don't realize that the Father has power over everything that happens on this earth. Some think that fearing God means to learn anything and everything that others say about God but choose not to listen to anything that the Father has said, saying, or will say, done, doing, or will do. Let us listen to how man fears God.

> There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John 4:18-19

This is what man is taught, they are taught that if you love God, you have nothing to fear. But which god do you love. Do you love God the Father of the Old Testament, or do you love this false Jesus

that changed my perfect Father and everything that He is about. Or do many just believe what they hear from whoever is standing in the front of a man-made church. Here is a good way to know if you truly love God the Father or not.

> If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen? And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his brother also. (1 John 4:20-21)

> Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? (1 John 3::16-17)

First thing first, I know many are going to look at this verse, and think it is saying that Jesus is God. But if you have read books six, seven, or this one, you know that God the Father breathed life into all of us so that we became a living soul. That is how God laid His life down for us. Jesus is not God, or better yet, I am not God the Father.

Now to the point of what we just heard. If you do not have a love for all, then you do not know God the Father. Remember that everybody on the planet is your brother one way or another. Remember what we are told.

> While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. The answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples,

and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. (Matthew 12:46-50)

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an

> hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. (Matthew 25:31-46)

A true fear of God teaches you that we love anyone and everyone that we see without looking at the skin color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. This love sees a fellow servant and or vessel of God that is in a rough situation. Then this love allows us to spiritually put ourselves in their shoes and ask ourselves how we would want to be done unto. And then do unto them as you would want them to do unto you if your spot was reversed.

WE ARE GOING TO THE PHILIPPINES

Okay, it is time to do the chapter on the trip to the Philippines as I told you all we would do later in the book. Now in this chapter, we are going to be going over the trip over there, and then we will be talking about the trip itself, then we will be talking about a few things that have happened since the trip. But I will say at this time, the last chapter of this book will be most of what has taken place since the trip.

I booked this flight over on November 4th of 2024. I booked it for 10 days in total. My flight departed Moline International Airport on the 4th, and I returned on the 14th. I booked it this way because they are over 12 hours ahead of our times zone. My flight was originally leaving on the 4th and not getting there till the 6th, so I wanted to be there for a full week.

Now the night before the flight, I got a call from Mary. I had told her that I had purchased a billboard ad campaign to promote the seventh book. I told her this because I thought she would be proud of me doing so because all the time I had been talking to her, she always told me to keep promoting the books. I was wrong, she got upset with me. I couldn't understand why. As it turns out, she was concerned about getting the money for the hospital bill. In my view, I figure I could do both. But because I was already in love with this woman, I asked her if she just wanted me to cancel my trip so that I could work and get her hospital bill paid off quicker. She obviously told me that she didn't want me to cancel the trip, and that we would just get the hospital bill paid later.

Later that evening, I got a text from the airline telling me that there might be a delay in my flight due to some bad weather forecasted

to be in the Dallas/Fort Worth, Texas area. This was supposed to be my first layover. The flight I booked went from Moline, Il. To Dallas, then to Las Angeles, then to Tokyo, then to Cebu, Philippines.

Now I have a confession to make, every time the Father sends me somewhere, I do not know for certain if I am coming back. Yes, I have the power to lay down my life and take it again. I have been this way ever since the first trip to Israel when I thought for sure that I was not coming back. But as explained in previous books, as soon as the plane landed and was rolling up to the walkway, the Father told me that I was not staying there. And because the Father already had it on my conscience that this is where I need to be to fulfill the scriptures, there was a part of me that thought I might not be coming back. So, anytime I travel outside of the country, I always tell my daughter that I love her and that I might not be coming back. Just to make sure she knows that I will obey the Father if He tells me to stay somewhere when He sends me. I will do as I am told, no questions asked.

Now because of the mood of Mary, and the text I got from the airline, I told my daughter if they cancel my flight in Dallas, I will just get a flight back. As we are flying to Dallas, the pilot announces that we have to slow down a bit because of bad weather. I had something like a three-and-a-half-hour layover there, so I didn't think that much of it. Then a little later in the flight, he announces that we must stay over somewhere in Kansa. Now I admit, I am not sure how they do that, but he said we had to stay over some town in Kansas. Now I am starting to get concerned about them canceling my next flight. And I started thinking I will just get a flight back to the Quad Cities, or Moline, IL.

Then when we finally started to get close to Dallas, my conscience started telling me that those that try to save their lives will lose it. Now I need to back up a bit. About a week or so before the trip, I got a call from a female friend. She told me that she had a dream, and in this dream, she dreamt that I would be dying if I took this trip. My immediate response was if that is the Father's will, then so be it. Now me hearing that those that try to save their lives, will lose it. And with me knowing that I must be in the bad weather and in and around the

ships to fulfill the scriptures, I started to get spooked. I have a genuine fear of the Father and I just knew that regardless, I couldn't go back.

Well as it turns out, that three-and-a-half-hour layover turned into something like a fourteen-hour layover. And yes, my daughter was very upset with me because I didn't come back. But she does not know the scriptures as I do, and now there is no way that I was coming back. Or at least until the scheduled time to come back. This fourteen-hour layover wound up messing everything up. For some reason, my flight to Las Angeles got cancelled, but my checked baggage still went there. They booked me on a completely different airline to get me to Tokyo, so the only luggage I had with me was what I carried on the plane. Fortunately, I had packed a couple sets of clothing in my carryon bag. Let me remind everybody, I do nothing on my own.

> I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. (John 5:30)

When I packed the clothing in my carryon bag, I didn't know why I did it, but I did, and I was glad that I did. Now the flight from Dallas to Tokyo was a direct flight instead of going through Las Angeles. But by the time we got there, the flight going to Cebu had already left. There is only one flight a day going from Tokyo to Cebu. So, I had a twenty-three-hour layover now in Tokyo because we got there an hour after the one daily flight had already left. I had to get me a sleeping room at the airport so I could have somewhere to get some sleep.

I arrived in Cebu on the 7th instead of the 6th, now this was a complete day later than originally scheduled. Now I am really wondering if I am doing wrong by being here, but my conscience kept telling me I had to be here. So, as soon as I got through TSA in Cebu, I had to go and fill out a lost luggage claim so that my luggage would be shipped to Cebu. I was told that it would be there in two or three days, and that they would notify me when it arrived.

Then it was time to walk outside the airport and meet Mary for the first time in person. I already knew what she looked like because of the pictures and videos she sent me. She and her boyfriend/husband were just outside waiting for me. I immediately asked where her daughter was. I mean, I wanted to meet the little girl that had me wrapped around her finger because she knew some scriptures. I was told that she stayed home with the nanny. And then was told that she wouldn't be with us for any of the things we were going to be doing. Mary went on to tell me that adults in the Philippines do not take their children on site seeing trips. I found this to be odd because everybody I have ever known, always takes there children on trips for leisure, but maybe things are different here in the Philippines. And her daughter had health issues that Mary preferred to keep at bay.

After the meet and greet, they drove around to show me some things. In this time, Mary asked me if I wanted to go swimming with the whale sharks. I told her that this would be fine, but I wanted to see the room she had got for me, and I wanted to put what little luggage I had with me there. Then after we did this, I bought some dinner with them, helping me find clean foods to eat. I say this because I know very little of that language and couldn't tell if certain things had unclean things in it.

During this time, Mary insisted that I cancel the billboard ad campaign. She reminded me of the times I got upset about spending so much as she also reminded me that I needed to worry about getting her hospital bill paid off.

Now we had to wait until something like 2 am to start heading for the place where we could swim with the whale sharks. During this time, I started to realize something. Every time I would try to teach anything about the Bible and the scriptures, Mary would cut me off and change the subject. As I have told you all in previous books, if I am talking with anyone, I am bringing the Father and the scriptures into the conversation, or we are not talking. But I am now over 8,000 miles away from home, so I just held my peace and went with the flow. And still every chance I could, I would try and teach what I know.

Then when we got to the whale shark attraction, we had to sit through a safety meeting because of the rules and so forth. During this meeting they mentioned that we are not to touch the whale sharks, or not even get within 15 feet of them. They mentioned that anyone that did this would be punished by law. Now before the trip, Mary had mentioned on the phone a few times, that if I got in trouble with the law and was thrown in jail, she would bail me out. I didn't think much of it, but at the same time, this was in the back of my mind. I didn't know, maybe they are really tough in the Philippines.

After the meeting, we go out on the boats to swim with the whale sharks as they feed them. As I jumped out of the boat, I drop my phone. As soon as this happened, I knew there was something wrong with me being there. Fortunately, one of the guides dove down to the bottom, and recovered my phone. The water was only 50-70 feet deep in this area. So, as we are swimming with the whales, I had in my mind that they said not to swim close to them, so I wouldn't, even though Mary and all the others would. And every time Mary tried to record me swimming under water close to the whale sharks, I would come up quickly. Why would I do this? Well, by recording me with the whale sharks, I would be making a graven image to show others. That is why I dropped my phone. It was the Father telling me not to film myself with the whale sharks.

It wasn't much longer after the swim with the sharks, Mary told me who I should email to make sure the billboard ad campaign got cancelled. I didn't know who or what she was talking about, so she took my phone and cancelled it for me. I told her it was fine to do that. But part of me wasn't sure I wanted to cancel it because this is an ad on an electronic billboard in Times Square, and I really think this would be good. But either way, I thought no big deal.

Now I am not giving details on every moment of the trip, but I am going to give an overall view of it. Before the trip over there, Mary had me book us all flights to Coron. Well, she found the excursion for two days while we were there but insisted that I pay for the trip. She said it would be a good place to get a picture for the cover for this book. I told you all about this in the chapter, Hook in your Jaw. At the same

time, I found myself paying for everything we were doing. They took me to a place to exchange what currency I had into Philippine Pesos. We tried to find several places that I could take money off of my card, but no place over there would except American Express. Well, I could use it for straight purchases, but I could not get cash off it. I am glad it worked that way because I only had something like $700 cash on me. And as it turns out, I only exchanged $600, but when Mary found out that I had another $100 bill in my pocket, she insisted that we go exchange that. I just ignored what she said and did not.

Like I told you all, it seemed that I was paying for everything. And with her constantly cutting me off when I would try to talk about the Father and all that He has taught me, I started to have doubts as to why she wanted me to come over. Don't get me wrong, she did pay for the whale shark attraction and a full body massage, but that seemed to just barely rectify anything. It got to the point that I was getting so mad when she continually cut me off, that I would cut her off, and then teach boldly.

> And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him. (Acts 9:2)

Yes, I literally live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. So, when I hear how they spake boldly, I know that there are times that I will speak boldly. Now the way I had planned the trip, I was going to be in Cebu for four days, then we would go to Palawan for three nights and fly back on the fourth day. This was so that we would be there before the night before the excursions started, have a couple days of doing the excursions before flying back to Cebu.

Yes, after I got to Cebu, and spent a couple of days with her boyfriend/husband, I started to feel comfortable around him. But here is something that I forgot to mention, and it is very important. I originally booked the trip to Coron, which is part of Palawan for the three of us. Mary had sent me their names, so that I could book the tickets. They both had four names, so I figured this was because they

both had two middle names. I know that is common in the US. When I book my tickets, I only must use my first and last name, so I only put their first, first name, and then their last, last name. When Mary seen what I had done, she got mad at me because they do it differently over there. Apparently in the Philippines, they have two names to the first name, and two names to the last name, without a middle name. I guess I made a mistake. I offered to just cancel those tickets and buy new ones so their names would match their IDs. I even thought that the TSA would allow it because the tickets did have their first, first name, and their last half of their last name. She agreed with me for a day or two. Then she said that they didn't think it would be okay. I asked again if they wanted me to just buy new tickets. Then they said they would just go and get some other IDs made up.

My first response was you can't do that, that is illegal. She told me that they had done it before and it wouldn't be a problem. I told them both, I will not pay for that because I do not think it is right. And I did tell them that if they get caught, I will not bail you all out of jail. I did say that with a joking tone to my voice because I figured they knew what they were talking about. I was at the point now that I really didn't want to go to Coron because all the time Mary had been cutting me off when I tried to talk about the Father. I remember the night before the flight there, I was in my room by myself hoping that wherever they were having the IDs made, would not get them completed so we could just not go.

Now I need to mention something here. Before I even came to the Philippines, I told Mary that I did not need to go Palawan, and that there were places in Cebu that I could get a picture for the cover. I even sent her some pictures of some attractions there in Cebu that looked like a good place to get a picture. But she insisted it would be better to get a picture in Coron. Yes, going to Cron had been a lifetime dream for her. She had told me that she would never be able to afford to go, but beings how I was coming over, now she could go. By this time, l was just trying to think of any reason or excuse as to why we shouldn't go.

But she called me the next morning to tell me that they had got the IDs and were on the way to pick me up to go to the airport. So, a couple of nights before going to Coron, I booked one room for all three of us, with two queen-sized beds. No, this was not one of the options that she said was available when I first booked the trip. So, I figured I would just wait until I got to Cebu to book the room, or rooms. But because I only had a certain amount of cash, and starting to be suspicious of why I was there, I was now starting to watch my funds.

Now on our first day there, we went to some kind of fast-food restaurant, and I had to let them find the beef dish, because as I said, I could not tell what had pork, crab, or some other kind of unclean thing in it. Mary asked me if it would be okay if she had something with pork in it. As I have told you all, I don't condemn anyone, I just share the truth. I told her I am not the judge, but I am not eating anything unclean.

Now it was time for us to go out on the first Island tour. Everything was going okay until they served lunch. Everything had crab or some other thing with unclean seafood. Well, they had vegetable eggrolls, and that wound up being the only thing I ate. And yes, Mary was still cutting me off every time I would try to talk about the Father. But when I started watching everybody on the boat eating the unclean, I heard a voice inside my mind telling me there is no fear of God in this land. I panicked, I immediately asked the Father what am I doing here. Mary started telling me that I have to do things differently, and I could not hold it in anymore. I let it out, I started telling her that she cannot tell me to do everything differently and still believe in me. In my mind, it wasn't adding up.

Anyway, that all calmed down and I did apologize for lashing out at her in front of everyone. Yes, there were about 20 people on the boat, and they all heard what I said to her. But it was all calm within a few minutes when I realized that I was embarrassing her. No, I wasn't yelling, but I was defiantly speaking boldly. Then on the way back, she told me that we would go to a restaurant and get a cheeseburger

and fries for dinner. This is my favorite meal of all time, and she knew this because this is something that we had talked about on the phone.

I don't know what happened, but her and her boyfriend got into some kind of disagreement. When she decided that she was just going to go to sleep. I need to mention that this is something she had told me in Cebu, that she does when she gets aggravated with someone and just wants to be alone. After she slept for a bit, I went for a walk to see if I could find something to eat. No, I could not because I was not sure what had unclean things in it, so I decided that I wouldn't eat. As I have told you all, I will starve before I dishonor my Father. So, I went back to the room to find Mary still sleeping and her boyfriend doing something on his phone.

It didn't take long before he and I started talking while she slept. And yes, I spent three hours teaching him of what the Father had taught me. It was great, he seemed to be very interested in what I was teaching. When Mary woke up, I told her I was fine now because I had just spent three hours teaching with her boyfriend and that he was interested in what I had to say.

Here is where I make a confession, the only reason I am tired of being rejected by this world, is because I want to teach all that the Father has taught me. So, when Mary constantly would not let me teach, it made me feel no different than being back in the states. I even told them that I didn't feel like I was in a foreign country, but I didn't tell them why. When the Father kept telling me to give her my heart, to fall in love with her, I truly thought that He was doing this because she would be the second to rise the dead. So, when I was able to teach her boyfriend for the three hours, I started to think maybe it was to show him all that the Father had taught me.

Then comes the second day of excursions, when we all got up, I told them I thought I was just going to stay in the room. I didn't want to put up with Mary constantly telling me I was wrong on everything. I mean she was completely different than the woman I had been speaking on the phone with for almost two years. But after just a few minutes, they convinced me to go. We saw some nice

attractions before lunchtime came again. This was a different boat, with a different captain.

During this time of visiting the attractions, Mary used her phone to take pictures and video underwater. I was doing the same, but my phone is waterproof, hers was not. Her phone quit working. Then Mary said it was somehow my fault that her phone quit working. She sounded as if she was joking so I didn't give it much thought. But I did tell her that once I start getting checks again at work, maybe I would check with Verizon, and see if I could get her a cheap phone.

When lunchtime came, I was prepared to see everyone eating the unclean this time, so I was just hoping that they had the vegetable eggrolls again. Then the captain says he is going to pray before serving lunch. This was different from yesterday, but I immediately thought to myself, no don't do it.

> But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:6-13)

I knew right away, this captain or man, wanted to be appraised by man and not God. Because he prayed out loud so that everyone could hear him. Directly going against the scriptures. But I didn't say

anything and just waited for the eggrolls. Then we spent the rest of the afternoon visiting different Islands and attractions. And it was on the last day there touring in which we got the photo for the cover of this book. In fact, it was the last site we were touring.

Here is something that I need to bring up. After we got the photo for the cover, Mary was over by the rest of the group. I ventured off to see if I could find another spot to take a photo. I was just having fun swimming around. Mary and her husband/boyfriend stayed back and talked with the captain. When I returned, Mary told me that one of the ship hands recognized me as Jesus. This is what the captain had told her. And then he told me the same thing. He said, not mentioning his name, but the captain said that he said, "we have Jesus Christ on the boat today" Yes, this excited me, and as soon as we did our final dock, I went to talk to him. Unfortunately, he understood very little English. So, I just got his phone number so that I could send him my website and some of the book's details. I doubt anything will come of it, but it was still exciting to be recognized.

Then on the way back, Mary said we were going to go get me a cheeseburger and fries again. I was hoping that we really would because I was disappointed that we didn't go the night before. So, we got back to the room, and we all got cleaned up, before going to find a restaurant where we could get me a cheeseburger and fries.

After walking for what seemed to be a very long walk, and passing many restaurants, we finally found one. We sit down and they bring the menus, Mary looked for just a few minutes and ordered me some beef dish, which was not a cheeseburger and fries. I immediately got upset because I wanted a cheeseburger. I didn't want some dish I have never heard of before that I was not sure I would even like. So, I asked her, what happened to me getting a cheeseburger. She said she figured I would like this.

I got very upset; I hadn't ever had anyone order something for me like that. And with all the times she had been cutting me off, and telling me that I was wrong about what I knew, I started talking aggressively. I even started tapping my finger on the table as I told her that this was not right. Oh yea, I don't think I mentioned that before,

most of the time when she would cut me off from teaching, it was to say that I was wrong. Then her boyfriend even told her, "You told him he was going to have a cheeseburger".

Now when he was telling her this, I heard in my mind, "just walk away". I thought to myself, I can't do that, I have to pay for this, and that wouldn't be right. Then Mary turns her attention back to me to tell me that one of them will just order a cheeseburger and I can have that, and they would eat the dish she ordered for me. I started to calm down as they ordered their food.

Then Mary started in, telling me that I was wrong about what I knew, and that I couldn't teach the way I teach. Okay, now I am really starting to get ticked off. I heard that voice inside my head again, telling me to just walk away. I started talking aggressively again, tapping the table with my pointer finger on the table as I talked. I could see her looking around to see if anyone was looking at us. Then I heard, she doesn't want to be around you. I immediately shut up, reached into my pocket, and put the 4000 Pecos I had on me, on the table. Saying I will just get out of your hair, as I get up and walk out.

As I was walking back to the hotel, I was thinking to myself, I hope I remember the way back to the room. Yes, I was a little shocked of what I just done, but I couldn't handle anymore. A couple of hours later, they came back. Mary had the cheeseburger and fries with her. She placed both the food and money that I put on the table, on the nightstand next to my bed. She didn't say a word, nor did I eat the food. She just went to sleep like she did the night before, but this time was because she was mad at me. And I could understand that.

We went down to the lobby together the next morning. Still not speaking, we sat at separate tables while we ate breakfast. We had to order what we wanted the night before. They only had one beef option, so obviously, that is what I got. No, I didn't care for it, but I was pretty hungry, so I ate. Then after checking out, we just sat in the lobby in silence, waiting to go to the airport that afternoon to fly back to Cebu.

Then we get to the airport and get checked in for our flight. Now when we checked in, the tickets were on my phone. Mary used my phone to get us checked in because she spoke the language. I guess I

should say this, most over there speak some English, but I speak less of their language. And they speak several different languages there. She gave me my phone back as I sat by myself, while her boyfriend and her sat separately from me. Yes, now we are starting to talk again, but very little. But we had to sit there for a little, over an hour waiting to board the plane. While sitting there, I watched some Netflix on my phone.

Then when it came time to board, I asked Mary where the boarding passes were. She said they were on the phone. I pulled up the tickets but couldn't figure out how it was supposed to work because I couldn't see any boarding passes. Then Mary started to panic, I guess there was a QR code on there that represented the three boarding passes. It was gone. She quickly took my phone and went back over to the check-in area. After a few minutes, she came back and told me that they couldn't board the plane. I asked why not. She went on to tell me that I messed up the tickets and now the QR code was gone. I told her I didn't do anything with the ticket, I was just watching shows on the phone. She takes my phone again and goes back over to the check-in area. I am starting to freak out because I knew they had made new IDs. Then she comes back, hands me my phone and starts yelling at me telling me as if it is my fault that they cannot board the plane. She even asked me how I felt about her daughter not having a mommy anymore. I couldn't figure out what I did, I offered to stay with them just to figure it out. I didn't know what to do.

This went on for a good 15 minutes or so, when they finally called my name to get on the plane because it was getting ready to depart. I walked out to the plane and waited for a couple of minutes, then proceeded back into the airport to find out if they were going to be able to board. I was told that they were not going to be able. So, I went back to the plane and boarded. As I sat down, the flight attendant told me that they were just waiting for two more. I knew who she was talking about and proceeded to tell her that there was a mix up with their IDs. Then I proceeded to tell her about how the boarding passes were on the phone, but somehow weren't when it was time to get on the plane.

Yes, I was feeling guilty because I knew that the boarding passes were on my phone, but couldn't understand why they weren't when it came time to board. But, every time I have ever got on a plane, no matter where I was going, I have always gotten a paper boarding pass. I was explaining this to her, and she even told me that it wasn't my fault. She even told me that they could take a ferry back to Cebu, it will just take them longer. This put my mind a little at ease because I was worried that Mary wouldn't be able to get back to her daughter. I didn't know how things worked in the Philippines.

Then we take off, and it wasn't but a few minutes later, I heard inside my mind, I separated you from her. I immediately looked for numbers to confirm what I just heard, and sure enough, the numbers lined up. I asked the Father two more times, in the one-and-a-half-hour flight back to Cebu, if He is the one that caused them not to be able to board the plane. Yes, it was confirmed both times.

So, now I needed to figure out what I was going to do when I got back to Cebu. My flight was going back to the US the next morning so I decided I would just hang around all night at the airport. I wasn't feeling like paying for a taxi to a hotel, and then pay for a hotel for about 12 hours. I mean yes, I had some money on my card, but I also knew that I wasn't going to get a paycheck for about three weeks once I got back to work. I just planned on watching Netflix while I waited and then get some sleep on the plane.

Then as soon as I got off the plane and got inside the airport, airport, I got a message on my Skype. Yes, this is one of the ways Mary and I would communicate, but I knew her phone was broken. It was a message from her boyfriend telling me to accept him as a friend. I did, and as soon as I did, I got a message from Mary saying that it was her. Then she proceeded to tell me to buy them different airline tickets with their proper names on it.

Yes, the Father separated us, but I still have feelings for her. And how could I leave her stranded there. So, after she sent the proper names, I bought them some new tickets. Then she told me to get them a hotel room for the night so they would have a place to stay until the next day. So, I did.

Now I forgot to tell you all earlier that my other luggage did show up the night before we went to Coron. Beings how I was checking out of the hotel that I was staying at in the morning, I told Mary to just take it to her place. Now after me walking away from the table at the restaurant, and then the Father separating us, I thought for sure that I wasn't going to get that luggage back. But because I did buy them tickets and a room, Mary had some delivery service go get my bag and bring it to me while I was waiting at the airport. I won't give amounts, but she even asked me to leave some money in an envelope for the nanny, just to make sure her daughter had sufficient food. And I did just that and gave it to this delivery guy, along with a few of the most recent books to take back to where he got the luggage from. She had told me that she was going to pass them out for me.

Now the flight back to Moline didn't take near as long as the flight over, but still close to 30 hours with layovers and such. As soon as my daughter picked me up from the airport, I told her to run me by the gas station to pick up some cigarettes. After everything that happened while I was over there, I was truly second guessing my decision to quit smoking as I did. And as soon as I got to a place where I could smoke, I lit up.

I got back on a Thursday night, and the very next day I emailed the company where I got the billboard ad campaign from and got it going again. At the same time, not thinking about it, I told them that I had met Mary. I even gave them some details as to what we all did. When I say not thinking about it, I wasn't thinking about how she said she wasn't supposed to meet the authors. Not trying to justify my actions, but I didn't think it would matter because she had quit her job. She was no longer employed there. I am not sure why I told them, but I do know that I wanted to get the billboard ad campaign going again.

I wasn't even back a week before Mary, and I started talking again. She went on as if nothing ever happened. She sent me some pictures of some really expensive iPhones and told me that I could send her the money for one of those. I couldn't understand, I told her while I was there, it will be a few weeks before I even get a check. And over

the next few weeks, she continually called me, emailed me, or skyped me asking when I would be able to send money.

In the chapter, Hook in your jaw, I told you all that I was helping her with her hospital bill, and that my miles slowed down. Well, I got so wrapped up in this newfound love that I completely ignored things of my own. About a week after I got back, I noticed I was running out of books to pass out. I was running out of the supplements that I have been taking since the incident in the truck in 2022. Then a few other things happened in which put me even further behind.

So, needless to say, as soon as I got things back into a comfortable spot, I sent Mary a small amount, but I think that was a mistake. I say this because the morning after I sent her this money, I awoke from dream. I couldn't remember exactly what the dream had to do with, but I knew that it had something to do with me exchanging money. And because I know the scriptures as I do, I thought this was the Father telling me not to send her money.

> For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (Job 33:14-18))

I say this because I wasn't sure I was supposed to buy the airplane tickets and put them up in a hotel room after the Father separated us, and now I was sending money to her again. At this time, I was still wondering why the Father had me fall in love with this woman, and then have things turn out the way they did. And to put it frankly, I was thinking I messed up again by going there in the first place.

Then it was about a month or so after I got back, Mary called me to tell me that the place where she used to work was holding her last check. She asked me if I had told them that we had met. I panicked

and hinted that I might have even though I knew I did. I wasn't sure how to tell her that I told them. I was surprised because I didn't think it would matter if she no longer worked there. She went on to tell me that she signed something stating that she would not meet any authors, and now they were coming after her for meeting me. It took me a few days before I could find the nerve to tell her that I told them.

Yes, I messed up, now the woman that I am in love with is in trouble because of something that I did. She told me that they were going to try and sue her because of what she did. When she told me the amount, I told her that I would help pay it off. Then she told me about how they had a recorded conversation between me and the guy that took her place. And yes, I completely forgot about him calling me regarding the email. And she said they were going to use this recorded conversation against her. But she also found a clause of the law there I the Philippines, stating that they couldn't use a recorded conversation in the courts if both parties were not made aware of it and or consent to using it. Oh, what a relief, I told her that I would make a video refusing to give them permission to use this recording. And I did so within a couple of days and sent it to her. It was about this time also, that I received a $16,000 bill that I must start paying on or before February 11, 2025. It has something to do with the truck, so I must pay for it or the trucking will come to a halt for me. And as the Father reminded me, I must be going from the east to the west or viseversa.

> For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. (Luke 17:24)

But me making the recording and sending an email brought some relief to both of us and things went back to normal for a couple of weeks. Then it was no longer an issue with them knowing. It was no longer an issue of what happened while I was there. It became an issue that took me by complete surprise. In the midst of all of this, she sent me a few verses which made it sound as if she could eat unclean

things, and still be saved. This was something that we talked about before, and she was seeking clarification of this matter. I asked her if she really wanted me to show her because the verses she sent me are easily explained. Well for me anyway because she was asking about things that I had to learn way back in 2011.

So, I made a video to explain this for her. I also made it public on my YouTube channel, THEJENKS1000, it is called clean or unclean. At first, when I sent her this video, everything seemed to be fine, but a couple weeks or so after that is when things took a turn for the worse. But this is where I am going to end the chapter because we have covered pretty much on the trip to the Philippines. And we are going to be doing a chapter later that will be talking more about this.

GOING THROUGH LIFE WITH ONE ANOTHER

Now we are going to switch gears a bit and start talking about what this two-year lesson has been all about. Yes, this was and is still the scariest lesson I have ever been through. But over the last few weeks, our Father has finally been able to get me to understand what this has been all about. And oh boy, what a lesson this has been. We will be talking about things that I have talked about in previous books, and things that I have recently experienced. And of course, we will be showing how it all connects to everything I have been learning for the past 14 years. So, to start this out, we are going to be showing a well-known way of doing life together.

> Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:24)

> For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. (Ephesians 5:31)

We are starting here because this is what has been happening with Mary and I. No, we were never going to be intimate, but we started sharing real-life events together long before we ever met in person. We told you all about how she would get me through my dark times. And how we would talk about some issues she had going on. How we both started feeling what the other felt. It is like her pain was my

pain, and my pain was her pain, emotionally that is. We both would get excited about the same things. It even got to the point that we would feel what the other would feel, before they even felt it.

Now we are going to talk about what it is like when a man and woman join together and become one flesh. We are not talking about when a man and woman go and make a marriage legal by man's terms. Let me remind everyone that there is not one spot in the King James Version of the Bible that we are told to go to a pastor, priest, or preacher to make a marriage legal. The very first example we can hear on this is Adam and Eve.

> And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed. (Genesis 2:21-25)

How did Eve become Adam's wife if they didn't go to a preacher to make it legal. I broke this down in detail in, Precept two, Behold a greater than Jonas is here, if you want to learn all more about this, but man and woman become one flesh just by having consensual sex. Even when a man lays down with a harlot.

> What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh. (1 Corinthians 6:16)

Now that two have become one flesh, they do everything as one person. They get a house or apartment together that they both like.

They take care of the housing together as one. All the money that comes into the housing is one amount of money. There is not his or hers when it comes to taking care of the bills. If one of the two becomes sick, the other helps pick up the slack that the sick partner cannot do. His problems become her problems, and her problems become his problems. And they go through these problems together with a willing heart. They give one another physical, mental, financial, and spiritual support. And they always do onto their spouse as they would have their spouse do unto them. If one of the two desires to be unfaithful, would the desiring want his or her spouse to be unfaithful with them. If one of the two is physically or psychologically abusive, would they want that to be done unto themselves? They come to have the same mind.

> Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one

> of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous:
> (1 Peter 3:1-8)

If they don't come to have one mind, then the arguments come into the relationship. And as we all know in the United States, the divorce by man's terms. Just a quick side note here. Just listen to how many sexual transmitted diseases there are now. And then just think about how easy man tries to make it to live with these diseases rather than to just listen to what our Father teaches.

Now that these two have become one, they get pregnant and have a child or maybe children. Then they, as one, raise the children. This is where I need to clarify something, It was a while ago that I told Mary, when I knew her as Lydia, that women will be saved through child birth as long as they continue in the faith with sobriety and holiness. I will say this though, when I told her this, I didn't explain it to her as well I am getting ready to show you all.

> In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works. Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety. (1 Timothy 2:9-15)

We showed all that we did so that you can see and hear that this is talking about the woman. We are not going to talk about all that we are showing here, rather focusing on the last verse. What does the woman have faith in? Does she have faith in the Father, or does she have faith in the one that changed my perfect Father? There is a big

difference. We all have heard that as long as we call on Jesus, we will be saved, right? Here is where I ask you, what god are you calling on?

> For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! (Romans 10:13-15)

When one calls on the name of Jesus, we are to be calling on the name in which is everybody on the planet. Not the false jesus that changed my perfect Father and tells everyone that it is okay to eat the unclean things. Not the one that tells everyone to celebrate birthdays and holidays. Your faith is then with a different god than my perfect Father. Sorry for the rant, so let us get back on target.

Why would the woman be saved through childbirth? It is because when the woman becomes pregnant, she is making a covenant with the child. In this covenant, she agrees to go through life together with this child as one. When this child is born, the woman does not make it about herself, rather makes everything about bringing the child into this world and loving he or she unconditionally. She goes through 9-10 months of her body changing. Then she goes through unbelievable pain delivering the child. Then she and the dad, feed the child, change the child, comfort the child, and they raise the child together as one. The dad cannot have a different set of rules for the children than the mother. Both must be in agreement on the ways to raise the children. But the parents are also responsible to teach the children the ways of God.

> And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them

> diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates. (Deuteronomy 6:6-9)

This isn't teaching the children the way of man or Satan. We are not to teach our children to expect to be treated better on certain days of the year. Yes, I am talking about birthdays and holidays. Why should your children only feel special at certain times of the year? The Farther doesn't do you that way, if you're reading this, then you know that that Father has loved you evenly throughout your years. To learn more about this and how parents cause their children to walk through fire by teaching them this, read Precept seven, For the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

This is where we really start to realize that our faith must have spiritual works involved. No, nobody will be justified by the law, but if one does not believe, or hasn't heard Moses and the prophets, their faith is dead.

> My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to

them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how

> that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:1-26)

Now we need to look at the same thing, but with different circumstances. Let us think of a divorced, or widowed woman that has a few children. When she meets another man and they decide to get married, there can be some complications if they do not come to have the same mind. This man has to become one with the children as well, even if she isn't widowed and their dad is still involved. And yes, the dad of the children must also come to be one with his new, and entire family, including the new man in his children's life.

When this new man comes into the picture, he must be of the same mind of her career. She must be of the same mind with his career. One of the others cannot come into the relationship expecting the other person to carry all of the burden. The burden of life belongs to the both of you as one burden. It is not his or her burden.

Okay, we have been talking about man and woman becoming one, and then when the children come along, the entire family becomes one. Just a quick note, when this family becomes one, it is eternal. I can say this because the Father has taught me about reincarnation through all of the lessons that He as taught me. My mom and dad are now my two granddaughters through my daughter. I have spoken about this in several books, but the fourth, Precept four, Jesus is here and Precept seven, For the powers of heaven shall be shaken is where you will find the best chapters on this knowledge.

But what about the job or jobs that this couple that has became one flesh has? We have to ask this because doing life together involves every aspect of life and not just in your home. The same general principles work for both, even if they work in different places. When someone goes to work for a company, they agree to perform a certain number of duties in an appropriate time frame. Let us just say one is

working in a factory, but this applies to most types of work. I am going to use this because my mom and dad both worked in a factory. This factory made toasters. Yes, I worked at this factory for a little while before I was 21, and have spoken about it in previous books. This is when the second of the two greatest commandments really starts to reflect in our lives. Yes, it applies to husband and wife, but it focuses more on the neighbor.

> Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22::36-40)

This factory made toasters or better said one type of product. Yes, they made different types of toasters, but one general product. Everybody had their own particular job to do so that after each toaster was completed, it was ready to be boxed, shipped, and sold. Everyone had to work in unison. It would start out with just some plastic molds, metal plates, and an array of different electrical components. Each item would have to be placed in the right spot at the right time. Meaning, you couldn't put the sidewalls on the toaster if you haven't put everything that goes on the inside in yet.

When one goes to work for this factory, they are agreeing with the company to fulfill their duties. They agree to take breaks that the time the factory decides. They agree to stay at work until the end of the schedule. In return, the factory or place of work agrees to pay them at a certain rate. If the employer does not hold up to their part in the agreement, the employee goes to find other work. If the employee does not fulfill what they agreed to, then they are forced to find a different source of income. All because one or more of all parties involved choose not to do life together.

Just think of it this way, when one goes to work at their place of employment, it is up to do unto their boss or employer the way they would want to be treated if they were in their shoes. If you are the employer, do you treat your employee as if you do not want them to do their job? If you are an employee, do you treat your boss as if you are the boss?

Does the employer tell their employees that they cannot take breaks? Does the employer force the employees to work overtime without pay? Would the employer want to just give the product away instead of having the finished product bought. Now if the employee shows up to work late all the time, or leaves the assigned shift early, would this employee want the employer to not pay for the entire day? In any scenario, if the employee constantly lacks at doing their duties, do they want the other employees to be lacking in their duties, so they now have to pick up their slack? But at the same time, it is about respecting the position above you. The employee answers to his or her boss, just as the supervisor answers to his or her boss.This even applies to how employees gossip about other employees, does the gossiping employee want other employees gossiping about them? It truly is doing onto others as you would have others do unto you.

> Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

Now we are going to talk about how one drives to one's place of work or employment. This is when we need to be thinking about when we are told to obey our Governors and such.

> Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. (1 Peter 2:13-14)

Yes, the stop signs, stop lights, caution lights, and speed limits are set by the governors, mayors, and other authorities set these for your safety, and the safety of others. If one chooses to break the speed limit, they take the chance of getting a ticket. Same effect when one chooses to run stop signs and stop lights. If this person continues to do these traffic offenses, their license is suspended or revoked. This is because the driver of the vehicle is choosing not to be as one with the state authorities.

Now let us say the driver of the vehicle breaks the speed limit, runs a stop sign or stop light and gets into an accident, as man calls them. Not thinking about what happens to the license, rather thinking about how it makes others feel when you do this. Is the driver thinking about that, or is the driver only thinking about himself, or herself? What if someone gets hurt or killed because you decide to break the traffic laws? Do you want others to break the traffic laws and maybe hurt or kill someone in your family? As you can hear and see, everything we do, is in consideration of everyone around us. And if anyone is questioning why it would be anyone around us, we are going to show you that everyone that you see is your neighbor.

> And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by

> on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise. (Luke 10:25-37)

Notice how the scriptures do not teach that neither the priest, Levite, nor the Samaritan knew this man that went down into Jericho. In fact, in this parable, this man went down into Jericho from Jerusalem, so the likely hood of anybody knowing him is even smaller. But the Samaritan saw him, and did unto him as he would want others to do unto himself if he were in the same situation.

Now I am going to be talking about my career or job. As you all know, I am a truck driver so when it comes to driving, I do and see a lot. And yes, I am going to go ahead and show it just for the sake of it, but I am a truck driver because this is the way the Father has me so that it will be just as the scriptures teach. I will be just as the lightning in the sky going from the east to the west when I am revealed.

> For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. And as it was in the days of Noe,

> so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. (Luke 1724-30)

But we are not only going to be talking about driving, we are also going to be talking about how I interreact to anyone and everyone I see or talk to. And I know that when we talk about a lot of this, you will be able to relate to this also. I say this because as we go through this, you will be able to see and hear how I am living life together with everyone.

Let us just say that I am just picking up a load at a warehouse in Wisconsin. This load is going from some food distribution center in Wisconsin, to another warehouse over in the state of Washington. When I go into the office to give the proper numbers to pick up the load, I don't necessarily have walk in with a smile on my face, but I am polite to the person working the shipping desk. I do this because I do not want them to treat me badly in return. And yes, even if they are having a bad day, I still treat them with a certain degree of respect. It is not my place to say how they should be feeling when I am around them, but it is my place to make sure that they don't feel uncomfortable being around me. If they want to chit chat for a few minutes, I will indulge them. Who knows, maybe this is what they need to release some stress that they are feeling. And if I just happen to be the person they need to blow some steam at, then so be it, as long as it makes them feel a little better. But at no time is it okay for me to take my problems out on them.

> But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil. Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. (Matthew 5:37-39)

> Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. (Matthew 18:21-22)

No, this is not as easy as I make it sound. And yes, it sometimes is hard for me if I am being yelled at, but what I always do is just shut my mouth, wait until I get by myself, and then relieve the tension by talking out loud, but I am always certain that nobody can hear me. Then within just minutes, all is forgiven and I go on with my day.

Now that they are loading my load, I need to be patient with however long it takes them to load it. After all, I am not in there loading it myself, so I am not sure what the procedure inside is like. Okay, I must admit something here. The Father has complete dominion over me and all that happens to me, so if it is taking a long time, it is because it is the Father's will for me not to get moving yet. I know other drivers do not understand this, but it is the same thing for them.

> Speak not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge. There is one lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another? Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell,

> and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. (James 4:11-15)

I know that there are probably a few people reading this thinking that this is talking about what we will do tomorrow and not at the present moment. Well, now I am going to give you something to think about. Today is yesterday's tomorrow, so this applies for the present moment also.

Now we are going to take this load out west. First thing I am going to do is make sure that that my truck is in safe condition for driving. I am going to make sure that headlights, turn signals, and brake lights are working. Yes, this is how I let fellow drivers, or my neighbors know my intentions as I drive. As we are driving, we need to constantly keep in mind that if it wasn't for everyone doing what they do, I would not be able to drive my semi. So, on that aspect, I am going to try to stay focused on being thankful for having the convenience of the roads to drive on. Now that I am focused on being thankful, I have already eliminated the idea of being upset when I drive.

> See that none render evil for evil unto any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men. Rejoice evermore. Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you. Quench not the Spirit. Despise not prophesyings. Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. Abstain from all appearance of evil. (1 Thessalonians 5:15-21)

Speaking from experience, if we tend to drive without trying to thankful, we tend to sometimes forget that everyone is a servant and

or vessel of God. And that everything that we see while we are driving is happening for a reason.

> They continue this day according to thine ordinances: for all are thy servants. (Psalm 119:91)

> Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear. Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement. Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. (1 Peter 3:1-7)

If the woman is the weaker vessel, then that must me the man is the stronger vessel. Instead of showing all of that again, we can just know that everybody is a vessel of God. And by knowing that, we can know that what ever is happening is a way to hear the Father talking to you. We explained this in the 6th book, Declaring the end from the beginning, in the chapter Hearing our Father's voice.

Obviously, when we see brake lights, we are being told someone in front of us is slowing down, maybe even coming to a stop. Then

when we see blinkers, we are being told that someone in front of us is turning. If we see a bunch of brake lights on several vehicles, we are being told that all traffic is coming to stop, such as traffic jam. If by chance you are driving over the speed limit behind another speeding vehicle and they suddenly hit their brakes, maybe you are being told that there is a cop ahead and you need to slow down. Yes, these are all things that we are told that when we hear this, we react with caution. This is also how our fellow drivers, or neighbors are communicating with us so that we can know their intentions as they are driving. After all, we all are sharing the same road.

Those are just some basic ways that we can hear the Father's voice, but these are also things to be thankful for. Just think how unsafe our trips would be it nobody had brake lights, headlights, or blinkers. But what are we trying to do when we use all of these lights on our own vehicles? We are trying to communicate with fellow drivers on the road. And yes, if we are on the road with others, we are in a relationship of some sort, with every person on the road with us. And as we all know, communication is required for any relationship. No, it is not a personal relationship, but it is a relationship. Everybody on the road has a reason to be there and have some place to be just as you or I do. And everything has been built for all and not just you or me.

All of this we just covered is just the basic mindset I need to have when I start driving. This helps me keep in mind that it is just not about me when I am driving. Now that I am driving down the interstate, I need to keep in mind that whatever I am doing, is having some kind of impact of my fellow drivers around me at all times. Am I keeping a safe following distance. I mean, I don't like it when other drivers follow me close, so why would I follow someone else close? There is way too many reason that any of us on the road might need to slow suddenly, and that can always lead to an accident. When I am passing, am I making sure that I am leaving space between my vehicle and the vehicle that I am passing? When I am passing someone, am I making sure that I get far enough ahead of them so that when I come back into the lane they are in, they don't have too suddenly slow down? If I see emergency vehicles, am I making sure I get out of their way?

My main concern is I am always thinking that I do not want to do something that causes anyone else to feel nervous when my vehicle is around them.

I am going to talk about something that I have talked about in a previous book. I have to be honest, I am a little cloudy on which book it was in because I have written so many, but I think it was in the fifth. Precept five, At midnight I will rise. What I am talking about is when I was driving southbound on a two-lane highway. Over the few weeks before this, I had gotten a couple of warnings from the company that I was working with telling me that I was not coming to a complete stop at some stop signs. This night, I was going south and I came up to a stop sign. I did this slow and row because there was no traffic around. As soon as I did it, I seen the light go off on the camera in my truck. I now knew what the company was talking about. But about another 10 or 15 miles down the road, I noticed northbound traffic coming at me with a car passing a northbound tractor trailer. I wound up having to slow down a bit and take the shoulder to prevent a head on collision. No, I did not look at it as if the other driver was in the wrong, rather I instantly realized that if I had come to a complete stop at that stop sign, I would have been at least 15 seconds behind the spot I was in. And then the northbound car passing the semi would have had enough time to pass without me slowing, nor taking the shoulder. So, even completely stopping at stop signs, stop lights, and using caution when we see caution lights is not just for us, it is also safety of others. This was shown that this is also because the speed limits, stop signs, stop lights, etc. were also made for the right timing of sewing everything together. If you want to understand this better, read Precept Five, At Midnight I Will Rise.

Now that I have been driving all day, I need to think about where I am going to stop and get some rest. After all, this is about a 2,000-mile trip we are on. But I also must be realizing that I am not the only one that needs rest. So, if I am planning on driving till late at night, I need to plan on getting somewhere so that I know there will be room to park safely. And realizing that wherever I am going to park, it was made for the convenience for all drivers and not just me.

All the truck stops and or gas stations were built for all of us. All of the stores that we all use were built for all of us. So, when I walk in there, I am always thinking of doing onto anyone I see, and or talk to as I would want them to do unto me. Even if it seems someone is having a bad day themselves and is treating everyone else like they shouldn't be there. I just try to stay out of their way. I am always trying to be very courteous and kind. If I am trying to get a certain product and there is someone blocking me, I have two ways that I think about it. First and foremost, I wonder if the Father is putting this person in front of me telling me that He does not want me to get this product. And, yes I can honestly say that this happens to me more times than not. I allow Him to guide me in every aspect of my life, even my grocery shopping, But if it turns out that this product is something that I really need, I then think that I can just go and do the rest of my shopping and come back.

Now we need to talk about the rules and regulations that we all have while we are driving. Yes, the rules and regulations for this for truck drivers are stricter for truck drivers, but at the same time, we are driving a vehicle that is a lot heavier than cars and pickup trucks. And of course, if a semi gets into a wreck, it does cause a lot more damage. So, when I am driving, I am also considering that I am driving a vehicle that can easily hurt someone. With keeping that in mind, I am more inclined to think of all the laws and rules for me are not just for my safety, but more for the safety of others. Now I am not talking about the stop lights, stop signs and speed limits, those are set for everybody.

I am talking about how truck drivers have certain laws they must follow to make sure that they are getting plenty of rest. I can only drive 11 hours a day, then I must take a ten hour break. I can split that ten-hour resting period as long as I am taking at least seven hours in the sleeper birth. I cannot be on duty for more than seventy hours in an eight day period and still be able to drive. If we truly listen to what the law is telling us, we can know that I can be on duty, not driving all seventy hours in this eight-day period, but I cannot drive until my hours fall beneath the seventy hours in eight-day rule. I do not think

of this being the government trying to make sure that I do not make to much money, as I have heard drivers say, but it is so that I do not hurt or kill someone because I am driving without the proper rest.

We need to also consider all of those that are out there patrolling the highways so that they can make sure all of us are following the rules of the road. For the most part, the police are not out here to ruin our lives. But their job is to keep the roads safe for all. If we do not comply with the laws, we get chastised by getting a ticket. If we continue to break the laws, we lose our license. This is not because the laws have a target on our backs, it is to keep the road safe for all.

I have told and explained to you all that I have nowhere to lay my head. I stay in my truck and have nowhere to call home. But I honestly look at my life as me living with everybody. I do not have to live in a house to live with you. Let me explain. We all have heard of neighborhood watches. Well, these watches are to watch a certain neighborhood because it is like all the people living in that neighborhood, watchout for one another to keep that neighborhood safe. So, in retrospect, they are kind of living together. If they are living together in that neighborhood, then isn't the whole town living together? Isn't the whole city living together. Or better yet, isn't the entire county living together? Well, then wouldn't the whole state be living together? What about the neighboring states, are not they still kind of living together in some way or another. In fact, the entire country is kind of living together if we think about it. Then aren't we living together with the bordering countries? Then what about their bordering countries? Then when we think about it hard and long enough, aren't we living with everybody else on the planet. I mean we all walk on the same earth, we all breath the same air, and we all bleed the same color blood. So, yes the earth being the spiritual house that we all live in together. Because we all have but one Father.

> Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers? (Malichi 2:10)

And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. (Matthew 23:9)

One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. (Ephesians 4:6)

God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; (Acts 17:24-26)

GOING THROUGH LIFE WITH GOD THE FATHER

The title of this chapter might have some wondering how in the world can we live life with God the Father. By the time we are done with this chapter, you will realize that it is a lot easier than one might think. But at the same time, many will realize that they have chosen not to live with God the Father even though the Father agreed to live with all since the foundation of the world.

We showed you all in the last book or precept, we were all here on the first day of creation. That is when our Father created the light even though the sun, moon, and the stars were not created until the fourth day of creation.

> In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1-5)

Yes, we are the darkness, deep, and the water that the Spirit of God move upon on the first day. As shown in the last book, we came from the stars. We are the stars that the tail of the beast drew with

him when he was cast to the earth or hell. If you want to understand all of this better, I suggest reading the Precept Seven. For the powers of heaven shall be shaken. But because we know that God created this light, even though we all had already transgressed His law and got kicked out of His house, He loved us first.

> There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John4:18-19)

This is when the Father told us that He would go through life together with us even though He had just kicked us out of His house, and to hell. That is love. This was our Father breathing part of Himself into each of us. This is when God breathed life into us so that man became a living soul.

> And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)

There was a time that I thought the King James Bible was the first bible that was published, but upon a little research, I found that there were some that were written and published before then. So, with knowing that the Father caused the holy men to write the scriptures, we can be sure that the earlier versions of the Bible did not say what the Father wanted them to say.

I realize that many cannot understand this as well as I do, but when I think about how it is exactly 400 years between the publication of the King James Version of the Bible and when the Father called me to the Bible, I am positive that the King James Bible is the Bible that the Father wanted for the book of instructions of how we are to live our lives today. This is also the 400 between the Old Testament and the time of Jesus. Some believe that the bible states that there will be

400 years of silence but the bible doesn't say this. All we are told is that God will send Elijah before the great and terrible day.

> For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts. Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, with the statutes and judgments. Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse. (Malichi 4:1-6)

And as I showed you all in previous books, the spirit of Elijah is when your conscience tells you that you need to be baptized. This is why we are told that many have done unto him as they will.

> And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist. (Matthew 17:10-13)

This baptism is supposed to causing a person to truly repent from the way they have been living in Satan's world and conforming to the ways of this world, but many get baptized and think they are automatically saved or reborn. Now you can understand what it means when we are told that they have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Nothing in many people's lives changes one iota after being baptized. If this is what one thinks, then you make God the Father a liar. He is constantly telling us that His hand is stretched out still. This is because He is also constantly telling us that He wants us to turn back to Him and hearken to His voice. And as shown in the last book, He will not have mercy on anyone without understanding and He will not show anyone favor. And that anyone without understanding will remain in the congregation of the dead.

When I was first called to the bible, I read it and apparently, I could see and hear things that others could not. I didn't know this back then but yes, the scriptures talk about this. Before I was set free, I even lost a couple of jobs because I refused to work on the holy days, and or the Sabbath day. It was and is more than just believing that our Father is perfect in everything that He has said, saying, and will say, or done, doing, and will do. It is about trusting in Him to carry you through whatever might come your way once you start listening to Him instead of man.

> And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them;

> and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. (Matthew 13:14-17)

> And he turned him unto his disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see: For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. (Luke 10:23-24)

I am sure that the reason I could always see and hear things that others could not is because I chose not to find something other than the King James Bible to get me through what I was starting to go through. As explained in previous books or precepts, the first 40 years of my life was the time that I wouldn't even talk to anyone about the bible because I didn't know anything about it, nor did I understand it. That was also how I knew no sin.

The King James Bible has been here since 1611, yet this world has chosen to listen to their imaginations instead of listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. They choose to go and seek everything about the bible by seeking everything but the King James Bible.

Now this is where I must make a confession. When the Father first told me that I was going to be doing a chapter on this, I had to ask Him how am I going to show them that I made the choice to live life with you Father? His answer was, what do you mean, what did you do the first time you read the bible. And of course, my answer to Him was you know Father, I immediately quit eating the unclean things. Then He asked me what I did as soon as I started the read the bible for the second time. Father, I realized that you never commanded us to celebrate birthdays and holidays, so I stopped. And as you know, Father, I did and still don't care what anyone thinks about me not going with the ways of the world, including my own daughter, when

she used to think that I quit celebrating birthdays so that I didn't have to buy her anything for her birthday.

The reason we bring this up is to show you all that I started to trust the Father the first time I read the Bible. As explained in previous books, I got kicked out of the man-made church shortly after I got baptized with water as an adult. Yes, when I got called to the bible, it was on this imaginary thought of some people being raptured, and I could see right away that the scriptures taught that there is no such thing. But I also could see and hear another thing, and that was that Jesus was and is not the Father or God for that matter. The very church that I was attending at that time, was teaching that Jesus is God. After bringing what I could see and hear to the pastor, and the congregation, I was asked to be quiet or just leave. Without hesitation, I grabbed my daughter and left. Yes, this was the Father kicking me out of the man-made church, but at that time, I didn't know that. The point we are trying to make here is that even though the majority did not see or hear what I saw, I stuck to what I saw and heard and trusted the Father to show me the way from there on out.

Then the Father tells me that this is when I made the choice to go through life with Him. Then He goes on to tell me that even though I didn't understand a lot of what I was reading, I refused to start seeking knowledge from the King Jame Bible somewhere other than the King James Bible. I stuck with it and believed what I read. Then I spent the next five years or so trying to obey everything that Moses said to do. Then in the later part of 2015, I listened to my conscience that kept saying that faith comes by hearing the word of God.

> For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall

> they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:11-17)

After hearing this in my mind at first, I didn't understand what I was being told. Yes, this was in the later part of 2015. Well after the Farther first called me to the Bible. And around six months or so after the first book, Precept One, Father forgive us, we haven't been listening was published. It was around the second or third day of me hearing this in my conscience, that I realized that I had unlimited internet and that I could listen to the King James Bible on Bible Gateway for free. So, starting with Genesis, that is exactly what I did, and oh boy, the Bible came to life as I explained to you all in the previous books or precepts.

Now we must back up to the later part of 2014, when the cross appeared on my forehead. Yes, this cross or seal appeared before we wrote the first book. But the reason we are talking about this again is because this is my deal that I have been sealed with. There are so many out here that say that they are sealed, yet they claim that I was here in the past and died so that they could do as they please, including blasphemy of my Father's name thinking that He is cruel mean, vindictive, unfair, and most of all, most don't want anything to do with the God of the Old Testament. In other words, they do not believe in the God of the Old Testament. But listen to this.

> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus

Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, (Ephesians 1:1-13)

For yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain: But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention. For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile: But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

> For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God is witness: Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ. But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children: So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us. For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God. Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe: As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father doth his children, That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe. (1 Thessalonians 2:1-13)

> Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27)

I received the seal on my forehead because I believed in the perfect Father the very first time I read the Bible. And I didn't believe that I needed to seek Him and all that He is about by searching for Him in any other place than the King James Bible. And from the first time I read it, I hungered for a deeper and better understanding of how the

Father could predict my life 400 years before it happened and put it in this Bible. And the more I sought Him and all that He is about in the King James Bible only, the more knowledge I was fed, and through the years, a much deeper understanding of our Father and who He is and what He is doing. And most of all, why He is doing what He is doing. And I truly feel that because I knew the scriptures were talking about my life, I believed that the bible was about us and not a book of people of the past.

This is where I need to make another confession. I was stuck here for a couple days of not knowing how to continue this chapter. Then earlier this evening, I got invited to go bowling with some people I have known for many years. I guess maybe I should explain this a bit. I have been staying at a friend's place close to where my daughter is because my truck needed to go to a shop for a few days. When my truck needs some work, and I have a choice of where to have it done, I always get it done close to my daughter's place because this also gives me a chance to spend time with my daughter and grand babies. So, when I got invited to go bowling with these people, I figured why not.

Anyway, while we were going to the bowling alley, even though I was a back seat passenger, the Father drew my eyes to a set of license plates that the last three numbers were 777. As soon as I seen that, I knew there was a reason He was sending me there. Remember I do nothing on my own.

> Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. (John 5:19)

Now that we arrive, and I am thinking that there is something going to happen tonight because of what I just told you all about. I was thinking I am going to hear or see something that He needed me to hear or see. Now let me explain, none of these people at the bowling alley, believe in the Bible or the Father the way I do. So, knowing this, I knew that there was going to be some heavy drinking, and

yes, there were even going to be a couple people stoned on marijuana. And throughout the books, we have explained that I don't do these because of how important it is to be sober at all times. So, I just started thinking that maybe the Father figures I need I night out to have fun. I mean it has been close to 20 years or so since I have been bowling. And we all just had a good time bowling.

After bowling a couple of games, we decided to call it a night. On the way back, I heard that little voice inside head, think about how you do not judge or condemn anyone for being who they are. And as soon as I heard that, I knew what I needed to do to finish this chapter.

Now that we have gone over how I chose to live my life with the Father when this all started, we need to be thinking about how I continue to live life with the Father. Yes, when I gave up eating the unclean, and celebrating holidays and birthdays, nobody that I knew or know has done the same. This does not mean that I cut them off or rule them out of my life just because they don't know what I know. Or maybe I should put it this way, they know what I know because I do share with them what I know, but they don't believe what I believe. I cannot rule them out of my life, nor cut them off from my life because I know that the Father does not rule them out of His life.

I too, as well as the Father will not force what I know and believe on anyone that does not choose to live life the way I do. But at no time will I do or say anything to make anyone feel that I am loved by God the Father more than anyone else. I know that He thinks of all of us being equal regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. We all have transgressed His law in one way or another. And I know that He does not respect anyone, nor show anyone favor. And as I have shown you all, we have one Father, so how could I do different then Him?

> My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him

that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith

> without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:1-26)

And I know that God the Father has breathed life into them just as He has me. Everybody is part of the body of Christ as explained in previous books or precepts. That is the first Jesus that we learn about through Moses and the prophets.

> Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to

another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked. That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured,

> all the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way. (1 Corinthians 12:1-31)

Don't get me wrong, there are times that I have had to cut people out of my life. And yes, a couple of them are my own family. And I have told you all about this in previous books.

> And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. (Matthew 5::29-30)

As shown in previous books, this is not a physical plucking of the eye, or a physical cutting off of the hand. It is spiritual, and if a person is causing you to go against the Father, then you cut that person out of your life. So yes, there are two of my brothers that I will no longer talk to anymore because they both had told me that the only way they will talk to me is if I leave the Father or God out of the conversation. Well, I cannot leave the Father out of the conversation and if I did, this would be me worshipping man before the Father.

But when I was at the bowling alley, nobody there treated me differently, nor did I treat them differently. And this is what it has been like ever since I got called to the Bible. I have never gone around

telling people they could not be who they are or that they could not do the things that they do. However, if someone ask me how I got to the point of knowledge that I do have, I will tell them of what I have done. And yes, there are times that I have even told people that if you want to get to where I am at with the knowledge I have of the Bible, you will do the same as I have. But I never say this unless they ask first, because it must be your choice and not mine. Can you see and hear how all of this corlalates with the two greatest commandments?

> Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

As you can see and hear, living with God the Father is also living with everybody else. It doesn't choose and pick who I love. It doesn't choose and pick who deserves better treatment. It is allowing the Father to teach me to love everyone the same. Just as the scriptures teach us.

> Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. (Galatians 3:24-26)

This is where I show you all that many have chosen not to live with God the Father just by refusing to seek Him out in the Old Testament so that He could teach you how to love everyone the same way that He does. We can hear the phrase, "the law and the prophets", a dozen

times in the New Testament. For those that believe they only need the New Testament, you are being told that you need the Old Testament.

Now I have shown you all in previous books, you are the house of God. This house is not built with hands. For a better understanding of this, read the chapter, Building your house on the Rock, in the fourth book or precept, Jesus is here. And notice what we are told to do with our house.

> Now these are the commandments, the statutes, and the judgments, which the Lord your God commanded to teach you, that ye might do them in the land whither ye go to possess it: That thou mightest fear the Lord thy God, to keep all his statutes and his commandments, which I command thee, thou, and thy son, and thy son's son, all the days of thy life; and that thy days may be prolonged. Hear therefore, O Israel, and observe to do it; that it may be well with thee, and that ye may increase mightily, as the Lord God of thy fathers hath promised thee, in the land that floweth with milk and honey. Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates. (Deuteronomy 6:1-9)

Just the same as when a physical house is built, the foundation must be built first. Well, the foundation of building our spiritual

house is the Old Testament. And this is why many houses will fall when things start to unravel.

> For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men. As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge. Shall I not visit for these things? saith the Lord: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof? (Jeremiah 5:26-31)

> Woe unto them that join house to house, that lay field to field, till there be no place, that they may be placed alone in the midst of the earth! In mine ears said the Lord of hosts, Of a truth many houses shall be desolate, even great and fair, without inhabitant. (Isaiah 5:8-9)

Now I realize that this is not talking about the spiritual houses, but this does lead into why many houses will fall.

> Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold,

a beam is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me

> in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. (Matthew 7:1-29)

And all of this will happen because many have chosen not to live their lives with God the Father by refusing to learn everything they could by listening to every word that He has said in the King James Bible.

Just a couple more quick things before we finish this chapter. To be going through life with God the Father, you need to be willing to do the same as He has. He gave you life, but He also gave life to everyone else on the planet. So, my question to you is, are you serving Him by loving your neighbor as yourself? Remember this is the second greatest commandment. Are you doing onto everyone you see, as you would have them do unto you? Are you so wrapped up into material things that you can't seem to get out of debt.

> A good name is rather to be chosen than great riches, and loving favour rather than silver and gold. The

rich and poor meet together: the Lord is the maker of them all. A prudent man foreseeth the evil, and hideth himself: but the simple pass on, and are punished. By humility and the fear of the Lord are riches, and honour, and life. Thorns and snares are in the way of the froward: he that doth keep his soul shall be far from them. Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it. The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender. He that soweth iniquity shall reap vanity: and the rod of his anger shall fail. He that hath a bountiful eye shall be blessed; for he giveth of his bread to the poor. Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease. He that loveth pureness of heart, for the grace of his lips the king shall be his friend. The eyes of the Lord preserve knowledge, and he overthroweth the words of the transgressor. The slothful man saith, There is a lion without, I shall be slain in the streets. The mouth of strange women is a deep pit: he that is abhorred of the Lord shall fall therein. Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the rod of correction shall drive it far from him. He that oppresseth the poor to increase his riches, and he that giveth to the rich, shall surely come to want. Bow down thine ear, and hear the words of the wise, and apply thine heart unto my knowledge. For it is a pleasant thing if thou keep them within thee; they shall withal be fitted in thy lips. That thy trust may be in the Lord, I have made known to thee this day, even to thee. Have not I written to thee excellent things in counsels and knowledge, That I might make thee know the certainty of the words of truth; that thou mightest answer the words of truth to them that send unto thee? Rob not the poor, because he is poor: neither oppress the afflicted in the gate: For

> the Lord will plead their cause, and spoil the soul of those that spoiled them. Make no friendship with an angry man; and with a furious man thou shalt not go: Lest thou learn his ways, and get a snare to thy soul. Be not thou one of them that strike hands, or of them that are sureties for debts. If thou hast nothing to pay, why should he take away thy bed from under thee? Remove not the ancient landmark, which thy fathers have set. Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men. (Proverbs 22::1-29)

As you can see and hear, when we get caught up in borrowing money, we become a servant to the lender and not to God the Father. And as we are told, we are not to owe no man money.

> Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. (Romans 13:8)

> Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. (Acts 5:29)

Another thing we want to ask is are you seeking the appraisal of man, or of God the Father. Remember we are told not to pray out loud, we are told to do our alms in secret, and we are told to fast in secret. Are you one of these people that goes around telling everyone that you know the scriptures, and that people should recognize you as just that. You may know a lot of scriptures, but your not listening to them.

> For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. (Galatians 1:10)

Going through life with God the Father is being willing to help anyone you see out of a tight spot. It is taking the burden off of people's shoulders when they are not able to do so themselves. Going through life with God the Father is having compassion for all man kind and not just the people you know personally.

GOING THROUGH LIFE WITH JESUS

This is the chapter I have been looking forward to doing every since I started writing this book. Yes, this chapter will be talking about my experiences with Mary in the Philippines along with the way things have been sense I have been back in the United States from that trip. Yes, Mary and I still talk two or three times a week via phone and text. But we are going to be talking about a lot of that later in the chapter. Right now, I want to focus on a lot of the things that Jesus said. Okay I need to get something straight right now before we get going. I have shown you all that Jesus was not here in the past and that I am here now. I have also been showing you all that the Father told the holy men to write what they wrote. They did not write about things they witnessed. I have also told you all that all the things you think Jesus did, will be happening to me, because I am that guy you read about called Jesus, or the Son of Man. So, when I say we need to focus on what Jesus said, I am just talking about what we have read about. If I am thinking correctly, there will be a few of the things that you thought he did in the past, being fulfilled in this book. Or better said, this is where some will see, hear, and feel the heavens starting to shake.

First thing we need to be hearing is how many times Jesus tells us about something that is referring to the law and the prophets.

> If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that

men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:11-12)

Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. (Matthew 11:11-13)

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22::36-40)

And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. (Luke 16:14-17)

And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat? And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an

> honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them. And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. (Luke 24:41-44)

> Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man. (John 1:45-51)

Yes, this last one is not Jesus saying the law and the prophets, but these are the scriptures that remind me of the second time I was in Israel. I was sitting at an indoor/outdoor restaurant with the tour guides that led me to the Jordan River to be baptized. Suddenly a man with sandy blonde hair was passing by, stopped and pointed at me saying, "I want your blessings", took a couple of steps and stopped, pointed at me saying, "I want your blessings" No, this is not how the scriptures show it to be, but this man knew who I was when he saw

me from a distance. And when he got close to me, he let me know twice that he knew who I was.

But we need to be thinking about what Jesus is saying when he is telling such things as, this is the law and the prophets. He or I am definitely not telling you that you should not seek what the law and the prophets. Quite the opposite, he or I is stating that you need to learn the law and the prophets. This is reflected in all the books that we have written. We are constantly telling the readers that the entire King James Version of the Bile in one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today and not a book about the past. One of the most important things that people seem to look over is that we are told that not one jot nor tittle will pass from the law.

> Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven. Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:16-18)

As we have shown in all of the books, the law is extremely important. Without the law, there is no hope of salvation. The law is what teaches us that everybody has their different laws, rules, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. In other words everybody is part of Jesus, or the one Son of God. The law is what brings us to Christ.

> Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. (Galatians 3:24-25)

Now let us listen to all the time we can hear Jesus say, "it is written".

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. (Matthew 4:1-10)

And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. For this is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. (Matthew 11:7-10)

And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Matthew 21:12-13)

The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. (Matthew 26:24-31)

Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And when they come from the

> market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. (Mark 7:1-13)

I must pause right here because this is saying something very important. When we hear Jesus saying," If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say a gift, by whatsoever thou mighest be profited by me; he shall be free". How many today is running around thinking that because I came here in the past, died on the cross, and now because of that gift that I did, they are set free? This is what it is talking about right here. This world believes I was here in the past, died on the cross, and now they have been set free

from the law and that all will be saved just from believing in this false precept. Now back to a few more times that Jesus says, “”it is written”.

> And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that Elias must first come? And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him. (Mark 9:11-13)

> And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Mark 11:17)

> The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born. And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body. And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it. And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many. Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. (Mark 14:21-27)

And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Luke 4:1-12)

And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought; Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Luke 19:45-46)

And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all

> things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: (Luke 24:44-46)

> They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. (John 6:30-35)

What do you think that Jesus is doing when he is constantly saying, it is written? He is telling you to look up what he is quoting. He is not telling you that you do not need the Old Testament anymore. We have been showing this in the last few books so we are not going to be showing it anymore on this right now. But we are now going to start talking about things that have been happening with Mary and I since I have been back in the US.

Now I told you all about how the Father told me to walk away from the restaurant, and then separated us with the flights. I have been back for three months, and it just dawned on me. That was the heavens being shaken. That was me departing from someone that was stoning me. We will be talking about that in a while, but I want to try and put this in some kind of order as to tell you all of it as it happened.

This might be a little difficult because there has been so much said, and I am trying to write this book, and along with other things, I might get it a little mixed up. But I will keep it truthful.

I told you all about how I heard the voice inside my mind telling me to just get up and walk away from the dinner table at the restaurant. Well, Mary kept telling me that I couldn't teach the way I teach, she kept cutting me off every time I would try to teach her what the Father has taught me. At that time, I didn't even recall what I had written in previous books. Words that peoples speak to each other in a negative way, is how we stone people without even picking up a physical stone. As it turns out, that voice I heard inside my mind is the Father and at that time, He was telling me to depart. Let me show you that it is the words people throw that are harmful.

Then Job answered and said,

> How long will ye vex my soul, and break me in pieces with words? (Job 19:1-2)

So, now I want to show a couple times that Jesus departs because the people were about to stone him.

> I and my Father are one. Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. (John 10:30-33)

> Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham

> is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God: Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am. Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by. (John 8:49-59)

Yes, the heavens started to shake a little right there. The scriptures started to happen. Then the very next day is when the Father separated our flights. And I told you all how she had me buy her and her boyfriend/husband airline tickets for the next day. I also put them up in a hotel room for the night, so they didn't have to sleep on the street. And as soon as I got back in the United States, I called and got the billboard ad campaign going again. We have already talked about that so we will just let it be.

Yes, I even told you all about me sending her some money for the hospital bill and to help her get a new phone, but I had that dream that made me question if I was supposed to. Yes, I still wonder this day if I was supposed to buy the airline tickets, and the hotel room. As I have told you all, I will do whatever the Father commands me whether it be good or evil. But here is my problem, I love Mary and her daughter.

Now it took some time for me to get my finances built back up from taking the time off to go to the Philippines as I have told you

all. And I cannot remember when it was exactly, but Mary started to pressure me about getting a new phone. Before I left, I had told Mary that I would help her get a new phone. I figured I would go through Verizon, the phone company that I have used for years. And I figured I would get a phone that was not one of the latest versions. But I am not sure how that would work over there with an phone from over here. And I am not sure I can just get a phone through Verizon, and then have her activate over there. Because if it is activated as a US phone, I think I would be paying extremely high phone bills.

But then the holidays started to interfere with my job. No, I don't have anything to do with the holidays, but as you all know, everything shuts down for the holidays. So, loads got hard to find, and when the company found me something, I wound up sitting for days waiting for the next load.

And it seemed no matter what I told Mary, she started to feel like I didn't want to help her anymore. Truth be known, yes, I am skeptical about sending money to help. After all, I do love this woman, and I strongly felt like the Father was making us into one before the trip.

Then Mary started sending me questions about the Bible. This made me feel great because I love to teach and here, she couldn't cut me off. She started asking via skype text, or just plain text. And I really started to look forward to her text again just as it was before I went to the Philippines. Well, if I am being truthful, I really have always enjoyed hearing from her, even when she is mad at me.

Apparently, she had to go a put a phone on her credit card, and it was not the most upgraded phone like she had asked me to get her. She had been texting me using her daughter's broken tablet. So, that wasn't working that well. Yes, I know the interest is expensive on credit cards, but as I told her, my hands are still tied.

It started to get to the point that she started to make unfounded accusations. Then it came time to take my truck to the shop to get some work done on it. This is some body work that needs to be done from me hitting a deer in Oregon last November. Beings how I have a deer guard on the front of my truck, the damage was minimal. And with the holidays being right around the corner, I figured I would

just wait until after the holidays to get it fixed. No, I don't celebrate holidays but my daughter and grandchildren do, so I figured it would just be best to stay away so that I am not forced to tell the grandbabies the truth. Yes, my daughter knows the truth, but it is not for me to force my knowledge on her or her children. And you all know from the last book we wrote, I hate the Nicolaitanes.

> So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. (Revelation 2:15)

Now when it comes time to take the truck to the shop in January, I took it to where my daughter lives now that the holidays were over. And beings how I did it the way I did, the insurance company made an estimate from the photos and sent the check to Davenport. I was thinking that it would only take a couple of days. Well, today makes day eleven and my truck will finally be ready tomorrow.

But during these eleven days, things really started to take a twist between Mary and I. I kept telling her that my checks were not very good, and then this happened with the truck. And yes, I still have the $16,000 bill that I must start paying on by February 11, 2025. And now that I have been off of work so long, it will be around three weeks before I get a decent check. It was almost like she thought I was lying to her because she wanted money, but my hands were tied. I cannot send what I do not have. As I have told you all in previous books, I do not have a bank account, or do I have any credit cards. I get paid via prepaid card. I do this because I refuse to pay interest. So, there is no way that I can send her money.

At one point, I was thinking that we seem to go through financial problems together. I mean she quit her first job before I went over there. At first, I just figured she knew what she was doing. Then it wasn't too long after I got back to the US, she called me to tell me that she had found another job. But then just a few days ago, she contacted me to tell me she was no longer working in the office. I guess many publishing companies over there decided to have their employees work from home without a base pay. The only way they can get paid is by a

small commission of what they can sell to authors from their homes. And with all the down time that I am experiencing, I started to think that we are going through a financial bind together.

But then I started to remember how some things make me feel when listening to the bible as I normally do before the truck went into the shop. And I kept hearing the spots about God will raise one up, like unto Moses.

> The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him. (Deuteronomy 18:15-19)

Yes, this is me that we are hearing about and there are a few other spots that are saying similar things. But there is one spot that each time I hear it since I have been back from the Philippines, it almost sends shivers down my spine.

> Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed? For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows,

> and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth. Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors. (Isaiah 53:1-12)

I told you all that when I listen to this now, it almost sends shivers down my spine. And I have listened the King James Bible now close

to a hundred times, if not more, but for some reason ever since I have been back from the Philippines, this one chapter really catches my attention. But we will be talking about this in a few minutes.

This is where I need to talk about a chapter that we have written in the fifth book or precept, At Midnight I will rise. This chapter is called, The sin of the world. This chapter reflects on how the world refuses to listen to the Father and yes, this is something that I have felt deeply because of how the world has been rejecting me since I started this in 2011. No, this was not the rejection of the books when it started, but everybody I knew at the time would not listen to anything that I learned in the scriptures. But then we started to write the books, they too, have been rejected. And it got to the point that I really started to feel I was only trying to teach my windshield.

So, now over the last few days, Mary has told me that she went out and bought a King James Bible and has been reading it. Obviously, this made me feel good because it truly felt like she is going to be the first one to listen to me, and the second to rise from the dead. But at the same time, she was sending me messages that indicated that she was very disappointed because I couldn't send her money. She accused me of lying to her just so that I didn't have to send her money. I didn't mind much at first because I know I am being honest with her, I am in a hard financial bind right now.

But then she started to send messages telling me that I couldn't be Jesus. This started to throw me for a lute because for the last two years, she has always told me that she believes in me. Then the Father started to tell me to think about everything over the last two years. So, I did as I was commanded. Yes, Mary had told me that with all the promoting of the books that happened during this time, Mary was not having any financial problems because she was working for a base pay, and then commission. Then I was thinking about how she quit her job before I went to the Philippines, and how she asked me to do all my business with her as far as writing, and or promoting anymore books. Then how the Father told me to depart from her as she was continuing to stone me with her words. Then I was thinking about how the Father separated our flights.

Then I was thinking about how she wanted me to buy her an iPhone 15 or 16, even though this was way out of my budget. I mean I must have money to live on and yes, I must have money to help others when the Father sends them to me. She is not the only person in the world that needs my help. These are just some of the thoughts that I was having when she was constantly hounding me about sending her money, getting her a phone, it got to the point that I started to feel like she thought she was the only person that I was going to help from here on out.

Please don't get me wrong, these thoughts were not all just in the last few days. These thoughts have been running through my mind every since I have been back. But over the last couple of days, Mary has been sending me messages telling me that the only way she will believe that I am Jesus is if I do a miracle or something that a normal human cannot. This obviously brought my attention to this.

> They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world. Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. (John 6:30-36)

Then she goes on to say the my prediction on Gaza didn't come true. If you recall, I didn't make a prediction on Gaza. I said just as the Bible says.

> And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. (Luke 21:20-26)

Yes, the seventh book, or precept was based off of that. And yes, we have seen Jerusalem compassed by armies for quite some time now. Notice how we are told that when we see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Nigh does not mean immediate. It just means it is close. I am just telling you all what the Father had me tell her. And as I told her, they are now trying some kind of peace thing, but I am reminded of this.

> But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail

> upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.
> (1 Thessalonians 5:1-3)

And beings how we did tell you all in the last book, Trump is the last trump spoken of in.

> In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.
> (1 Corinthians 15:52)

And paying attention to all that he is doing, I think we can certainly say that the trumpet is sounding.

But then Mary started bombarding with messages requiring me to do some miracle before she would follow me. Or her words were submitting to me. I told her that I cannot do anything until the Father reveals me. It was like she was trying to get me to try and force the Father to reveal me. And to me, this is foreign talk because as explained in previous books, nobody is physically following me anywhere. I have nowhere to lay my head. I have nowhere to call home. I am constantly going from the east to the west, just as the lightning in the sky. I told her all of this before, and it seemed like I needed to keep telling her the same things over and over. It got to the point that I told Mary that she was bordering on crossing the boundary that would bring our friendship to a stop. I even told her again that she needs to read the books, but she refuses to do so.

She even started to try and use my daughter as a tool for her to use to say I couldn't be who I am. As I told her, my daughter has no choice to believe in me because she knows without a doubt, that her two oldest daughters are my mom and dad reincarnated. My daughter just won't let go of the holidays and birthdays.

Then it was only a day later when she started bombarding me again with very negative messages. She even went as far to say that she even told a couple of her authors to review my website. She said they think I am crazy. She kept insisting that if I couldn't do a miracle

on the spot, then nobody would ever believe. This was all breaking my heart. I couldn't believe the woman that has been telling me for two years that she believed in me, but now the truth comes out. And it happened. I did just as I warned her about. I blocked her, and directed her emails to my spam box. I told the Father, I am not going to continue to have her throw these stones at me. And my yeas are my yeas, and my nays are my nays. I am not going to repeat the same thing over and over again.

Then the Father tells me to put this in the book because He wants the world to know how they have done to Him since the beginning of time. And then tells me to write what I am thinking about all of this now. So, I am doing as I am being told to do. Mary believed in me as long as I was giving her money. Mary believed in me as long as she didn't have to change anything in her life. Mary believed in me as long as it was beneficial for her. Mary claimed to love God and Jesus as long as Jesus was helping her to stay with the ways of the world. But when I brought up how nothing of the law has changed and that we all need the law, she started throwing larger stones

I want to say that what I am getting ready to write took me by surprise, but I can't. I am thinking it was about a month ago when the Father told me to think about Isaiah 53. Then He tells me to think about how He told me to give her my heart. Then He tells to go ahead and fall for her head over heels, and I did. Then I go over to the Philippines to meet the woman that supposedly believed in me, which meant everything to me. Then He tells me to think about how she lied to me about her husband/boyfriend. How she didn't let me know about him until she was forced to. Then He tells me think about all the times she cut me off while I was trying to teach. Then to think about how the Father told me to walk away from the dinner table at the restaurant. Then how the Father separated the flights going back to Cebu. Then how she kept harping on me to get her one of the most recent iPhones even though that was way out of my budget.

Okay, we need to talk about something that the Father just brought to my attention. And I will admit right up front. My love for her did not allow me to understand this until I just wrote the

last sentence of the last paragraph. She knew that she didn't have a waterproof phone but used it underwater while I was there. Her phone did have a crack in it also. Her phone quit working just after being used underwater the first day of the tours in Coron. She talked as if she was disappointed, but surprised that her phone had stopped working. Naturally, I had compassion and started asking how she was going to get another, not even thinking about how she just quit her job before I got there. But I did tell her that it would be a while before I could help her get a phone because it was going to take a while before the money started coming in again. But she knew of the money that I spent on promoting the books over the past two years. Then when I get back, she starts harping on me to get a new phone for her.

Well, I cannot remember if I told you all about the email, I sent to the company that she used to work for or not. She sent me a nasty email saying how dare I tell them that she threw her phone and broke it on purpose. I emailed the company thinking that they were now lying on me. But I forgot one very important factor. I am shown all things to come.

> Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. (John 16:13)

So, when she sent me that email saying that I told the company that she threw her phone, was me being shown that she did take her phone underwater being nonwaterproofed and a crack in it, knowing that with the money I had spent with her company when she was with them, that I would spend the money on a new phone for her. Because I never told anyone how she broke her phone. Then with her quitting her job right before I go over there, was her thinking that I would completely financially support her before anyone else. I must make a personal comment now. I know I haven't been with anyone in over nine years, but I am not souly supporting any woman without

making her my spiritual and physical wife. And there is no marriage in the resurrection. WOW! Now I know why I have had some very difficult financial responsibilities. Now I know why I had that dream about money the morning after sending her some. The Father has been telling me that I am not sending her anymore money. Because she has not been doing anything but using me for the last two years. She kept telling me that she believed in me so that I would continue to use her to promote the books. She was getting a commission. All she believed in was that she could get money from me, not that I am Jesus, the walking word of God.

Okay, to get back to where we were. Then the Father tells me to start thinking about how hateful she has been towards me in most of the messages she has been sending lately. Then the Father flips things around a bit. He tells me to now think about how He feels. The way Mary did unto you David, is the way the world has done unto me since the beginning. He goes on to tell me that they want me in their life when it benefits them. He goes on to tell me that as long as they are getting most of what they want out of this life, they do not want me in their lives. Then He goes on to tell me that people will tell people that they love me, but won't even try to understand what I have done for them. Then He ask me, how can they love me yet not want to know anything about me. How can they love me when they give all my glory to my son and not me? Then the big one, then He tells me, just like Mary, people will claim to worship me, but when they start going through tribulations and it seems I am not helping the way they want, they no longer believe in me. Then He tells me that I now know what it truly means when people worship me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

> Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: (Isaiah 29:13)

> This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. (Matthew 15:8-9)

Then the Father goes onto tell me that all this time that the world has been rejecting me and all that I have been trying to share is actually people rejecting God the Father.

> And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt even unto this day, wherewith they have forsaken me, and served other gods, so do they also unto thee. (1 Samuel 8:7-8)

Now we are going to look at going through life with Jesus from a different perspective. We have shown in several of the previous books, that everybody on the planet is part of the one son of God. This is the life that the Father breathed into man so that man became a living soul. This is when it is so important to realize that everybody has their own different laws, rules, judgments, testimonies, ordniances, and commandments. This is where you find Jesus for the first time I the Old Testament.

> And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, See, I have called by name Bezaleel the son of Uri, the son of Hur, of the tribe of Judah: And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship, To devise cunning works, to work in gold, and in silver, and in brass, And in cutting of stones, to set

> them, and in carving of timber, to work in all manner of workmanship. (Exodus 31:1-5)

> And he hath filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship; And to devise curious works, to work in gold, and in silver, and in brass, And in the cutting of stones, to set them, and in carving of wood, to make any manner of cunning work. And he hath put in his heart that he may teach, both he, and Aholiab, the son of Ahisamach, of the tribe of Dan. Them hath he filled with wisdom of heart, to work all manner of work, of the engraver, and of the cunning workman, and of the embroiderer, in blue, and in purple, in scarlet, and in fine linen, and of the weaver, even of them that do any work, and of those that devise cunning work. (Exodus 35:31-35)

So, this means that everything that has been built, has been made by the Son of God which is everybody on the planet. This means every house, store, gas station, truck stop, factory, tractor, combine, plane, train, boat, traffic sign, stop light, car, pickup, tractor trailer and road has been made by the one Son of God. Anything that has been made with human hands, has been built by the Son of God.

> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:1-3)

God breathed life into every person on the planet, and then Jesus tells us that he is the life. Let us look at both of these verses back to back.

> And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)
>
> Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)

That life that God breathed into man, is the light that the Father created on the very first day of creation as we have shown in previous books, and in this book. That is God the Father putting a piece of Himself into each of us. That is what makes us all part of the One Son of God.

Here is the point I am trying to get to. This means when you go into a gas station, truck stop, store, factory, business office, or any building where there are people, you are dwelling amongst Jesus. How you treat these people is how you will have done unto you. Are you doing unto them as you would have them do unto you?

This means every time you get behind the wheel of a vehicle, you are seeing Jesus everywhere. We talked about this in the chapter Hearing the Father's voice in the sixth precept, Declaring the end from the beginning. The speed limits were made by Jesus for the safer for all. All vehicles were made by Jesus, not just for our convenience, but for the safety for all. But he is also driving every vehicle on the road. Are you treating the other drivers as they are there to do their part, or are you treating them as if they should not be sharing the road with you? And every time you see a vehicle do something, are you realizing that you are probably being told something by the Father? It could be something happening in front of you that you need to be paying more attention to. It could be Him is telling you it is time for to take a break. It could be a number of things in which it is up to you seek out the Father so that you can see His Son.

KING JAMES BIBLE, IT'S NOT A HISTORY BOOK

The first thing I want to mention is that this is an addition to the book after originally sending the manuscript into Urlink. I thought I was done with the book when a few things started to happen which made me think differently. First was that I was reading the manuscript after they sent it back to me for corrections, and I noticed that I started to hint or insinuated that the Bible is not a book of the past quite a bit.

Now I need to mention something right up front before I can tell you all what happened that made me realize that I needed to do this chapter. I told you all in the last chapter that I had blocked Mary and directed her emails to my spam box. That only lasted two or three days, it kept lying on my conscience that I couldn't do that. So, I unblocked her and redirected her emails back to my inbox. And I am glad I did because she called me the evening after I had unblocked her. I was just so happy to hear her voice. Then she apologized to me for being the way that she was being. Then she proceeded to tell me that she had been reading a few books of the Old Testament, and also the book of Mark. She had come across some spots that people had seen Jesus do miracles, but yet still didn't believe that he was the Jesus. Let us listen to one of these times.

> And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and

> what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. But Jesus, said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching. (Mark 6:1-6)

She told me that she could not persecute me anymore. She had come to realize that even when people see me do miracles, there will still be more that do not believe than that do. And of course I apologized to her as well. But it was the night that I wound up blocking her, that I did tell her that the King James Bible is not a history book. Then the very next time I started listening to the Bible, which was the very next morning, and was thinking about how I had told her this, it just started to make a lot of sense. It was actually the Father speaking when this first came out of my mouth.

I started to think about all the lessons the Father has had me go through over the years, and I just realized that I have been saying that the Bible is not just a book about those of the past, but it is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives. It was the very day that Mary called me after I had unblocked her, I realized that the Bible was not written so that we could learn of what they did in the past, but it was written so that we could know what to expect in our lifetimes. And of course, so that we could learn the instructions on how to obtain an eternal life of perfection with the Father.

At this time, I am not going to be giving what has been happening with Mary and I, but I will say that we are now getting along better than we ever have. Our feelings for one another have grown to be stronger even though we went through, okay I will say it, we went

through dark times together. We are in different parts of the world, but we are experiencing life together as one. We will be finishing this chapter with a lot more about Mary and I, but first we need to be looking at several things that we need to be looking at differently now that we are starting to look at the Bible as a book of lessons and not a book of the past.

With that being said, I will tell you all right now that this chapter is going to be long. When I first realized this, I thought beings how I had already submitted the manuscript, that I would just write another book because there is a lot of things to go over. But then the Father told me that this book isn't published yet, and that I need to add it to this book.

First thing we need to talk about is all the assumptions that I thought might happen around February 11th of 2025. If you are reading this, then you know that nothing really seemed to happen on that date. But as I was driving the other evening, thinking about how I was going to do this chapter, I did realize something that did happen shortly after the 11th. I came to the understanding that the Bible is not a history book at all. And then I was told not to write another book on this topic but put it in this book. And now I feel that I am behind schedule because I feel that the world is waiting for this book to be published.

> Paul called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother, Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both their's and our's: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge; Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you: So that

> ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: (1 Corinthians 1:1-7)

I say that I feel that the world is waiting for this book because I am now coming to realize that we are revealing the biggest secret that has been kept since the foundation of the world. And by the time we are done with this chapter, you too will be able to see and hear what I am now realizing. I mean truth be told; we have been hinting towards this in the last few books. But now we are going to be proving that the King James Bible is not a history book at all. It is our schoolbook, but it is all years of schooling scattered throughout one humongous book. And the only way to get each level of schooling as needed, is to continually seek the Father with all of your heart, soul, mind, and strength. Or better said, to obtain each level of schooling, we must receive precept upon precept, line upon line, little there and a little here.

> Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: (Isaiah 28:9-10)

To comprehend this, we are going to be going over several things that we should be paying attention to as we read the Bible. But we are not going to be covering things in the order in which the Father taught me, we will be going over certain things and whenever something catches my attention in the section we are discussing, we will discuss that next. And let me remind everyone now that there is no way I could understand everything the way that I do if I hadn't been in this schooling myself for years.

There are so many things that we need to cover that I do not know where I should truly begin so we will be beginning with something

that we have been talking about in the last few books. And that is how what has been written has been written for our learning.

> For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15::4)

Now when one truly thinks about this, they could say that whatsoever was written before this very verse was written for our learning. But when we really think about it, the entire King James Bible was published in 1611, and there is not one person on this planet, that was alive then, so for all of us, the entire Bible was written aforetime. So, that means the entire Bible was written for our learning. Not different versions of what has been written. Now I want to look at when we are told that all scripture was inspired by God.

> All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)

Now I realize that some will say that this states that scripture is good for correction and that is why there are different versions of the bible. But then why are we told not to add to or diminish from the word of God?

> Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

So, what could it mean when we hear that all scripture is profitable for doctrine, reproof, correction, and instructions. Well, we all know what doctrine and instructions is so let us focus on reproof and correction. Beings how we know we are not to add, nor diminish

from the word of God, we need to understand how we can reproof and correct the word of God. So let us look up the definition of reproof on e-Sword, and online bible concordance. A bible study tool that allows any and all to look up any definition of any word in the King James Bible.

> G1650 ἔλεγχος elegchos el'-eng-khos From G1651; proof, conviction: - evidence, reproof. Total KJV occurrences: 2

So, now that we can see and hear the definition of this, we need to ponder on how we can get evidence or proof of what we are learning beings how the entire bible is based of belief and faith.

> Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, (Ephesians 3:13-15)

> But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. (1 Corinthians 8:6)

> Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see

death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him. By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. By faith Abraham,

when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff. By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones. By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible. Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace. And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: Who through faith subdued

> kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions. Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect. (Hebrews 11:1-40)

This is where we really need to understand that we need to believe what we are reading and hearing when we read the King James Bible for the first time. It is not about believing that the words that are written in the King James Bible need to be changed or altered so that you can make better sense of what you are hearing. It is not about believing that there are different bibles that make more sense. It is not about believing every little thing someone tells you that the Bible means.

> Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh

> is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. (1 John 4:1-3)

It is about believing in the very King James Bible it very self and living by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

> But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. (John 5:36-38)

> But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day. The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is

> written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. (John 6:36-45)
>
> For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. (Romans 10:2-10)

And most importantly, it is about believing the King James Bible is about our lives and that it was written for us to learn of our Father. Not believing it was written so that we could learn what they did in the past. And this is where the faith plays its part. Then after realizing that the King James Bible is about our lives, we have faith that through this one and only bible, we can learn about our Father and what it is all about.

I can truly testify to this because this is exactly how it has worked for me. I told you all about how when I read the Bible the first time, I heard things that pertained to my very own particular life. That did not cause me to want to venture off into other bibles but rather made me desire to seek more of what I was hearing. I wanted to see if this bible that was published in 1611, had more about my life in it.

Now we have talked about reproof enough, I want to talk about correction a bit. I know a lot of people automatically think that this means that there are mistakes in the bible. But as we have shown in previous books or precepts, our Father is perfect, so how could perfection make a mistake? This also kind of falls back on believing in the perfect Father. It was because I believed what I heard, I had faith the Father would help me though whatever was coming next in my life

But we are talking about corrections now, so how can we correct perfection. You see we have pointed out in the last book, that there are people that search out what some call the lost books of the Bible, such as the Dead Sea Scrolls. And there are spots in the Old Testament we can hear how the Father will say things like the rest of what someone did, is written in the book of Jasher. But we cannot find a book of Jasher in the King James Bible. Let me show just two such verse. But also let me remind you that there are many areas in which say something similar.

> And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day. (Joshua 10:13)

> (Also he bade them teach the children of Judah the use of the bow: behold, it is written in the book of Jasher.) (2 Sameul 1:18)

But the book of Jasher is not in the King James Bible. I will mention one more book that is well known, but we cannot hear that

something is written in it. This is the book of Enoch. Yes, as stated in previous books or precepts, this is one book that I did read near the end of 2014. At that time, I had no where the understanding that I do now. But this book did nothing but confuse me because of things it talked about. Such as a day being divided into 18 parts. They have books that they say are lost books of the bible or even forgotten. This is when I can say that anyone that thinks that these books were lost or taken out of the bible because that is how all of this must be hidden, is clearly mistaken.

Let me give a good example of how we can show that the scriptures are for correction and reproof. This is the eighth book that the Father has had me write. In these books, I have misquoted or mistaken the interpretation of what I might be writing about. For example, I started talking about reincarnation in the first book, then when my mom was reincarnated as my first granddaughter, I got it wrong in the second book. But because I continued to seek the truth from the Father and His Bible, I eventually got it correct in the fourth book. It does not mean that we should completely understand it as soon as we read it, it means we should always and only seek the truth through the King James Bible and the Father.

Another example is, well I am not sure what book it was, but it was one after the fourth, I showed that John 16 was talking about many people at once being born into the world.

> A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. (John 16:21)

When I wrote about this, I was thinking that all those that will be rising with me, would all be being born into the world at once. Then I think it was the 6th book or precept, maybe the seventh, as to when I realized that this is me being born into the world. Actually, me being revealed. As you can see and hear, I can't remember for sure which book it is in, and I am not going to even try to look through the books

to try to find it. If you have read the previous books or precepts, then you know exactly what I am referring to.

This is where we need to jump into the next section of corrections. This is where I want to talk about 2 Peter.

> For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:21)

Yes, we have shown this before, but only as the holy men only wrote what they were being told, which is still very true. And we have talked about how the Father had me warn of something that was coming that would be devastating for the world. And as we all know Covid-19 ravished through the world in 2020. But now we need to listen to something else.

> For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. (1 John 5:7)

In the last couple of books or precepts, we have been showing how the Father breathed a part of Himself into each of us. If God the Father, the word, and the Holy Ghose is within all of us, then we can know that it was the Father that actually wrote the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. So, if we believe the Father actually wrote the perfect Bible, how can we correct anything in it.

Let me explain, I have been doing this for years and am now just showing you all that the Father wrote the scriptures. So, beings how the perfect Father wanted a specific thing written, He would only allow certain books to be placed in the Bible. It is kind of like when something is being built for the very first time. I mean for the first time in existence. You must build a prototype first. Then make an instruction book so it can be put together the correct way by anyone. You cannot make an instruction book for something that takes thousands of parts without having some kind of baseline for what you

are getting ready to build. Like when the Write brothers invented the first airplane. They had several failed attempts at making an airplane that would fly. I wasn't there, but I am sure they tried different pieces or parts that would not achieve their goal. So, after failing a few times, they would try a different design. Then after several different designs are parts, they came up with a flying machine. And we all know about the planes we have now.

It is the same thing with the King James Bible. Our Father would have people write certain books, but not all the books were the exact design that He wanted in the Bible so that the Bible would work the way He wanted it to. He didn't want to just make it simple to understand, He designed it so that the only way we could find Him, was and is by truly seeking Him and Him only. Just like the Write brothers, they couldn't take claim for inventing an airplane unto they actually had one that flew.

Now we are going to change the topic a bit. I have been showing you all the first three things that I heard the first time I read the Bible that made me believe that the Bible was about my life in particular. Well there is something else that I hear a lot that reminds me of when the Father first called me to the Bible.

> All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. Thy raiment waxed not old upon thee, neither

did thy foot swell, these forty years. Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee. Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him. For the Lord thy God bringeth thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water, of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills; A land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees, and pomegranates; a land of oil olive, and honey; A land wherein thou shalt eat bread without scarceness, thou shalt not lack any thing in it; a land whose stones are iron, and out of whose hills thou mayest dig brass. When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the Lord thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. Beware that thou forget not the Lord thy God, in not keeping his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day: Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied; Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the Lord thy God, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage; Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water; who brought thee forth water out of the rock of flint; Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna, which thy fathers knew not, that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter end; And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that

> he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the Lord thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. As the nations which the Lord destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the Lord your God. ((Deuteronomy 8:1-20)

I was 41 years old when the Father called me to the Bible. The first 40 years of my life, I did not go without anything. Yes, as explained in previous books, I did go through some very hard times. I even tried to take my own life in 2009. But as we have learned through the previous precepts, we are to hate our own lives as shown in;

> If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. (Luke 14:26)

I feel that we can safely figure that this was part of how the Father was to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. Then over the next couple of years, He caused me to; And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live. And He did all of this so that when He called me to the Bible in 2011, I would do as; Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee. Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him. Yes, I just quoted some scriptures without posting them as normal, but you can see and hear what I am trying to say.

And now I want to switch gears on this chapter right here because I want to talk about how He is saying to fear Him. I am really thinking that when I felt I needed to do a chapter on fearing God in this book, I was also supposed to be talking about what we are talking about now. So, beings how we are told that we are to fear the Father so many times, I think that it is safe to say that the fear of God the Father is mandatory for any kind of salvation.

For years now I have been saying that the only thing that is going to get people to repent is seeing the wrath of God fall upon several people. I am not talking about bad weather, earthquakes, wildfires, etc. I am talking about something that happens to the entire world at or around the same time that will truly put the fear of God in all those that remain. It seems to me that most everybody in this country anyway, just continues on with life thinking nothing will ever happen.

Yes, I am talking about when people start seeing millions, or even billions die, then they too will form a fear of God the Father. Now I know that sounds pretty drastic, but think about it for a minute, everything that we have been told to look for to know the end is getting close has now happened, or is happening in our lifetimes, but nobody seems to care. I guess they call it normalcy bias. Oh well, is the thought of many, it is not affecting me.

You know I have even asked Google where the bible talks about people fearing God after they see or hear of people dying. And yes, I have another one up on Google because Google cannot answer this question. Because the Bible does talk about this.

> And when Pharaoh drew nigh, the children of Israel lifted up their eyes, and, behold, the Egyptians marched after them; and they were sore afraid: and the children of Israel cried out unto the Lord. And they said unto Moses, Because there were no graves in Egypt, hast thou taken us away to die in the wilderness? wherefore hast thou dealt thus with us, to carry us forth out of Egypt? Is not this the word that we did tell thee in Egypt, saying, Let us alone, that

we may serve the Egyptians? For it had been better for us to serve the Egyptians, than that we should die in the wilderness. And Moses said unto the people, Fear ye not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord, which he will shew to you to day: for the Egyptians whom ye have seen to day, ye shall see them again no more for ever. The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace. And the Lord said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto me? speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forward: But lift thou up thy rod, and stretch out thine hand over the sea, and divide it: and the children of Israel shall go on dry ground through the midst of the sea. And I, behold, I will harden the hearts of the Egyptians, and they shall follow them: and I will get me honour upon Pharaoh, and upon all his host, upon his chariots, and upon his horsemen. And the Egyptians shall know that I am the Lord, when I have gotten me honour upon Pharaoh, upon his chariots, and upon his horsemen. And the angel of God, which went before the camp of Israel, removed and went behind them; and the pillar of the cloud went from before their face, and stood behind them: And it came between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of Israel; and it was a cloud and darkness to them, but it gave light by night to these: so that the one came not near the other all the night. And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the Lord caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided. And the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground: and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left. And the Egyptians pursued, and went in after them to the midst of the sea, even all Pharaoh's horses, his chariots, and his horsemen. And

it came to pass, that in the morning watch the Lord looked unto the host of the Egyptians through the pillar of fire and of the cloud, and troubled the host of the Egyptians, And took off their chariot wheels, that they drave them heavily: so that the Egyptians said, Let us flee from the face of Israel; for the Lord fighteth for them against the Egyptians. And the Lord said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand over the sea, that the waters may come again upon the Egyptians, upon their chariots, and upon their horsemen. And Moses stretched forth his hand over the sea, and the sea returned to his strength when the morning appeared; and the Egyptians fled against it; and the Lord overthrew the Egyptians in the midst of the sea. And the waters returned, and covered the chariots, and the horsemen, and all the host of Pharaoh that came into the sea after them; there remained not so much as one of them. But the children of Israel walked upon dry land in the midst of the sea; and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left. Thus the Lord saved Israel that day out of the hand of the Egyptians; and Israel saw the Egyptians dead upon the sea shore. And Israel saw that great work which the Lord did upon the Egyptians: and the people feared the Lord, and believed the Lord, and his servant Moses. (Exodus 14:10-31)

But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet. But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own

> power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God. And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things. And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him. And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much. Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband. And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things. (Acts 5:1-11)

These are just two areas in which we can hear that once people saw or hear of God taking peoples lives, fear came to them. These are not things that have happened. But are things that the holy men spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. Yes, to help us fear our Father, but more importantly, so we could learn the powers of God. It was written so that we could learn from it. Remember these men did not write what the wrote by their own will. Or better said, they were not writing of things they witnessed.

I have told you all how the Father parts the red sea for me all the time. I drive a semi, the people are the waters, and they all have red blood. When looking at this from a spiritual perspective, we can see how all the people on the planet could be the red sea. I have seen and told you all about how I might be sitting at a very busy intersection without traffic lights. But after shortly sitting there for a few minutes, I ask the Father to part the sea for me and within what almost seems

like seconds, a gap appears that allows me to move through the intersection safely. He made or makes this gap, just as He parted the Red Sea. I couldn't even begin to tell you of how many times I know I am going to need to change lanes soon when it doesn't look like it is going to be possible, and without even signaling that I want to change lanes, space opens up and now I have room to make a move. This also goes with hearing His voice at the same time, if I am signaling because I want to move over or change lanes but find that I cannot move because of traffic, that is Him telling me to just stay put.

But I don't want to give the wrong impression here. I don't think, nor want it to be the death of many to form this fear. I think many know what kind of fear that we should have, but don't because God is not impacting their lives at the moment.

Earlier tonight I seen a beautiful example of the fear that we should have of the Father. It shouldn't be a fear for your life, but a fear that grows into respect and honor. Let me explain what I seen earlier today. I am at my daughter's house visiting my grand babies. I have been getting a few things done with the truck. And there is a couple of the children's friends staying over tonight. Well, they had been told to go to bed and to go to sleep. My daughter was very busy with something very important, while another adult and myself were watching the children. For almost an hour, the children kept acting up and goofing off. When we would tell them to go to sleep as their mother had told them to do before she got busy, they would yell back at us and tell us that we were not allowed to tell them to go to sleep. They were very loud and obnoxious, which is normal for young children.

But it got to the point that they started throwing insults, (stones) at adults, or their grandparents. Being very disrespectful of us. Well, we do not believe in stepping over the rules their mom has for them, but we will enforce them. But when it gets to a point the child or children need to be chastised, that is completely the parent's responsibility because they are the ones that set the rules, not us. Well as it turns out, my daughter was just in the other room on an important phone call but could hear everything that was going on.

Then she got off the phone and surprised me to all get out. She went over to the oldest, because she was the one instigating the whole ordeal. I watched my daughter stand over her, did not yell, but raised her voice a bit and spoke very boldly. My daughter told her to stop what she was doing, and continued by telling her that she would take away many of the privileges that she has, away from her. Such has her cell phone, screen or TV time, grounding her for a very long time. Then after she was done chastising her, my daughter asked her if she understood.

And as I am watching this, I see the fear in my granddaughter's eyes. And was instantly overwhelmed with joy. Not because my granddaughter was being chastised by her mom, but I instantly knew that this was or is the fear I have for our Father. That fear that my granddaughter felt in that moment didn't make her stop loving her mom, nor did it make my granddaughter feel like her mom didn't love her. That chastisement didn't make my granddaughter disrespect her mom. In fact, that chastisement caused a fear of her mom because she knows that her mom has the power to do exactly as she said she would do if she didn't stop. And by the same token, that chastisement will cause my granddaughter to show a little more respect to her mom and the grownups, if you will. And let me say this also, at no time did my granddaughter fear her mom hitting her, because my daughter will not hit her children under any circumstances., and they know that. This chastisement will actually cause my granddaughter to honor her mom. And my granddaughter will now start to listen to what she is told a little more. I say a little because I know how children are and yes, they are going to act up at times.

But that chastisement will actually lead to my granddaughter loving her mom even more in time because she will realize, if she doesn't already, that her mom is a grown-up, knows a lot more than she does, and that her mom will guide her through life. And that her mom is not chastisement to harm her, but to help her grow up to be like her mom. The exact same fear we should have of the Father.

Beings how we are now realizing that the King James Bible is not a history book, we need to go over a few things that sound like they

are past tense but are actually things we are to learn from. You see, when the Father had these holy men right what they wrote, the Father made it sound as if it past tense, and to the Father it is because He is all knowing. But to these men, they were only writing what they were being told to write. So, when we read or listen to the Bible, it sounds like it happened already, but in reality, the all-knowing Father was just having these men write about our very own lives, and what we can learn from what He had these men write. All 12 years of schooling crammed into one big book. Everything is a lesson, not history. Think about this as we go through all of this. If you add to, take away from, or alter the lesson book, the book is no longer valid. Now we can know why we are told not to add or take away from anything in the Bible.

> Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

> For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. (Revelation 22:18-19)

I think the first of several things we are going to be talking about is the light that our Father created on the very first day of creation. Why is it that nobody seems to ever wonder what this is when the sun, moon, and the stars were not created until the fourth day? I know that we have shown this before to show that we were all here on the first day, but now we are only focusing on what we should be learning from this. So, let us look and listen to what we are told on the first day of creation.

> In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1-5)

I know we have talked about this before, but we should be noticing how the Day and Night are capitalized even though they are not proper nouns, nor at the beginning of the sentence. We should automatically be realizing that the Day and Night have a deeper meaning than just the ordinary day and night. Now let us look at what this Day and Night are referring to.

> But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. (1 Thessalonians 5:1-5)

Now I realize that my knowledge is exceeding far from when I first read and listened to the Bible. But this first day of creation should have put many into a state of curiosity. But what we just showed in 1 Thessalonians should also get us to wonder if we are the children of the Day, or some are the being the children of night that the Father is

referring to on the first day, then what does it mean that He hovered over the face of the deep. This is where we need to listen to.

> And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. Revelation (17:15)

Let us listen to a couple times we can hear the scriptures refer to men as waters. The first one we are going to show is going to have a couple things we need to talk about before going on.

> I will love thee, O Lord, my strength. The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower. I will call upon the Lord, who is worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. The sorrows of hell compassed me about: the snares of death prevented me. (Psalm 18:1-5)

Remember how we showed you all in the last book, Precept Seven, For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken, that even though you are alive in the flesh, breathing, and blood pumping, you are walking in death. We have been showing you all that we are in hell now, how else can the sorrows of hell compass anyone if you are not there? Did you notice how it is stated the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. "Just quoting what the scriptures are saying. Those ungodly men are the children of the darkness. But they are still children of God the Father, so we love them also because we do not know who is in the body as we are shown in;

> It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory. I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord. I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in

> the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter. (2 Corinthians 12:1-4)

Now I want to talk about how this man was caught up into paradise and heard unspeakable words. We have been showing you all that the scriptures are the heavens. In other words, the scriptures are paradise. When one thinks of paradise, it is also capered to heaven. Remember their conversations are in heaven, as shown in;

> For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

And that is why this man heard unspeakable words. How many of you have read or listened to the scriptures, and not understood what you have heard? These are unspeakable words until the Father gives you an understanding. Whether or not this man is in the body, only God knoweth, so we show a love and compassion for all.

Now as you all can tell; I can connect any verse of the Bible with at least one more area of the Bible. We are starting to get away from the first day of creation, so I want to talk about something I have mentioned in previous books, or precepts. This is only the first day of creation, so we can easily figure that this is not a literal day in our perspective. In fact, each day of creation, we can figure that it took God a thousand years. Remember this;

> But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. (2 Peter 3:8)

Okay, all of what we just covered came from just talking about the first day of creation, so now it is time that we move on. I am not going to break down each day because this would make this chapter a thousand pages long if I was to break everything down. The whole point of showing you the breakdown from the first day of creation is so that we can all know that there is a lot of sections of the Bible that relate to just this one day. And I haven't even covered it all, so I am not going to break anymore days down.

The next thing I want to bring to your attention is when the Father tells us that we are not to eat the blood. There is only one area that tells us that the blood is the atonement, and that is why we are not to eat it.

> And whatsoever man there be of the house of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, that eateth any manner of blood; I will even set my face against that soul that eateth blood, and will cut him off from among his people. For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul. Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, No soul of you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger that sojourneth among you eat blood. And whatsoever man there be of the children of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, which hunteth and catcheth any beast or fowl that may be eaten; he shall even pour out the blood thereof, and cover it with dust. For it is the life of all flesh; the blood of it is for the life thereof: therefore I said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoevers eateth it shall be cut off. (Leviticus 17:10-14)

First, we need to draw our attention to how the blood is the life. Remember that God breathed life into man so that man became a living soul.

> Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens, And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground. And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:1-7)

I guess this does kind of refer to another day, but it is the seventh day. Or the Sabbath day in which God gave charge to everything to His One Son. Now we need to listen to when Jesus tells us that he is the life.

> Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

> Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:1-6)

Now I am not going to be breaking these two sections of the Bible down, I just mainly wanted to show that blood is the atonement, and that Jesus is also the life beings how the atonement and the life are both talked about in what we showed in Leviticus. Now listen to this.

> Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement. (Romans 5:9-11)

Now we have been showing you all that everybody is part of the One Son of God in every book or precept. I want to say that we nudged towards it in the first, but I know we really started to show it in a much more profound way in the second and beyond. So, check this out.

> God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: For in him we live,

> and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:24-30)

Okay, we are now moving on. I want to talk about something that is going to blow your mind. Now that we are realizing that the Bible is not a history book, we need to be thinking of why our Father would have caused these holy men to write what they wrote. It is designed in a way that we would listen to what is being said and ask ourselves, what can I learn from this. Not what I can learn about this but what am I learning from what I am reading or hearing.

And just a quick note on the eating of blood. We are told not to eat the blood, but yet we are also told that people have to eat my flesh and drink my blood.

> Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. (John 6:53)

As pointed out in previous books or precepts, I have devoted every second of every minute of every hour of every day for the last 14 years of my life to the King James Bible and the Father to be able to learn from the Father to bring the world an understanding of the Father.

> And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. (1 John 5:20)

By reading or listening to the books that the Father has had me write, you are eating my flesh and drinking my blood. Remember this is a spiritual workings, not physical. And beings how I just said that, I am going to show how we are to be worshipping God in the spirit and truth again because the things we are getting ready to discuss, you will truly need to put on your spiritual eyes.

> But the hour cometh, **and now is**, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

Now with that being said, we are going to talk about Noah's Ark. Remember the King James Bible is not a history book, so this couldn't have happened. People have been running around for years trying to find the Ark, but you can't find something that never existed. Think about it, if Noah built this Ark, where did he build it? If he built it somewhere around Africa, or even around Jorden, how would he get animals in the ark that only live in the northern hemisphere. Like polar bears, artic fox, snowy owls, walrus, artic hare, snow leopards, musk oxen, etc.? If he builds the ark in the northern hemisphere, where would he get the lions, tigers, camels, and other animals that only live where the temperature is always warm? It can't be done. He would have had to build the ark, sail to other areas of the world to get the other animals. But there is a lot we can learn from just the lessons of Noah and the ark, so that is what we are going to be looking at.

First thing I want to talk about is how many animals was Noah told to take in the Ark. Most are already thinking that he was told to take two of every animal. You're right, and you're wrong. He was told to take seven of the clean animals. The male and female alike.

> And the Lord said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. Of every clean beast

> thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female. Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of all the earth. For yet seven days, and I will cause it to rain upon the earth forty days and forty nights; and every living substance that I have made will I destroy from off the face of the earth. And Noah did according unto all that the Lord commanded him. And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth. And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the flood. Of clean beasts, and of beasts that are not clean, and of fowls, and of every thing that creepeth upon the earth, There went in two and two unto Noah into the ark, the male and the female, as God had commanded Noah. (Genesis 7:1-9)

Now let us listen to when the Father said to take two of every animal on the ark. Yes, we just heard that Noah was instructed to take two.

> But with thee will I establish my covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee. And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. And take thou unto thee of all food that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and

> for them. Thus did Noah; according to all that God commanded him, so did he. (Genesis 6:18-22)

Notice how we are told twice that Noah was to take two of every animal but only told once that he was to take seven of the clean animals. There might be a couple other spots that we can hear bring two but let us just focus on these two. I brought this up because Mary and I were having a conversation one day and she mentioned how Noah was told to take two of every animal. Come to find out she had been only reading parts of the bible that a devotional was telling her to read. And she was only aware of Noah being told to take two of every animal on the ark. When I brought the seven clean animals to be taken on the ark to her attention, she asked why. And instantly the Father had me tell her, just as I am sharing with you all now, it was so that we could recognize the importance of putting a difference between the clean and unclean. And this was done in the beginning of the Bible, before the law of the clean and the unclean was written.

> For I am the Lord that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I am holy.- This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth: To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten. (Leviticus 11:45-47)

Now I didn't show all of Leviticus 11 because this just an additional chapter to this book, and not another book. We have shown this full chapter enough throughout the books or precepts. But we can be certain the Father had these holy men write this within the first few chapters of the Bible so that we would keep our eyes and ears open for when we heard anything about making a difference between the

clean and unclean, just as He did with telling Noah to take seven of the clean, and two of every other animal.

Now we are going to talk about a few more things we can learn from the days of Noah. We are not going to cover everything, but just a few things. For instance, how God said He was going to destroy all mankind because they were listening to their imagination of their hearts instead of Him.

> And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. (Genesis 6:5-7)

Now we are going to jump to the New Testament and listen to a couple times that we are told that it will be just like the days of Noah.

> But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. (Matthew 24:36-39)

> And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. (Luke 17:26-27)

Why would the Father have these men write that it will be just as the days of Noah? It is so that we can go back to the beginning of the Bible and learn what the days of Noah were like. Did you notice that only Noah and his wife, his children and their wives were saved from the flood? We are even warned of this later in the New Testament.

> Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ: (1 Peter3:20-21)

Now I want to focus on what we are told about these days in the book of Job.

> And thou sayest, How doth God know? can he judge through the dark cloud? Thick clouds are a covering to him, that he seeth not; and he walketh in the circuit of heaven. Hast thou marked the old way which wicked men have trodden? Which were cut down out of time, whose foundation was overflown with a flood: Which said unto God, Depart from us: and what can the Almighty do for them? (Job 13-17)

How many people today spiritually say the same thing when it comes to reading or learning the Old Testament? Now I want to listen to a few times that we can hear the Father talk about how man listens to their imagination today.

> Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart,

and not out of the mouth of the Lord. They say still unto them that despise me, The Lord hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. For who hath stood in the counsel of the Lord, and hath perceived and heard his word? who hath marked his word, and heard it? Behold, a whirlwind of the Lord is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. The anger of the Lord shall not return, until he have executed, and till he have performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. (Jeremiah 23:16-21)

But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward. Since the day that your fathers came forth out of the land of Egypt unto this day I have even sent unto you all my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them: Yet they hearkened not unto me, nor inclined their ear, but hardened their neck: they did worse than their fathers. (Jeremiah 7:23-26)

Now therefore go to, speak to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, Thus saith the Lord; Behold, I frame evil against you, and devise a device against you: return ye now every one from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good.

> And they said, There is no hope: but we will walk after our own devices, and we will every one do the imagination of his evil heart. (Jeremiahn 18:11-12)

I must pause on this last one we just posted. I have had so many people tell me that it isn't time for them to learn. Or God will tell them when it is time for them to learn. Or there is nothing we can do about it anyway, whatever happens is what happens. . Well as pointed out in the last couple of books or precepts, if you have heard or seen the word bible, the prophets have been sent to you. And it is your time, hopefully it isn't to late. Anyway, back at it.

> I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem an horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none doth return from his wickedness; they are all of them unto me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah. Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the Lord. They say still unto them that despise me, The Lord hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. (Jeremiah 23:14-17)

Okay we have seen enough of how our Father talks against those that listen to their imagination of their hearts. Yes, this includes all of those that teach man-made holidays and birthdays is something that we should be doing, even though God the Father never commanded

it, nor did it come into his heart. So, what else did God warn us of in the days of Noah.

> By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. (Hebrews 11:7)

Yes, you just heard it, God condemned the world because of their lack of obedience, lack of trust in Him, and most of all, because people listen to their imagination and not Him. Now let us listen to when we are told that even though Israel be as the sand, only a remnant will be saved.

> And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. The remnant shall return, even the remnant of Jacob, unto the mighty God. For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. (Isaiah 10:20-22)

> And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God. Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth. (Romans 9:26-28)

> For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; (2 Peter 2:4-5)

Now the last thing I want to bring up about the days of Noah is how the waters were on the earth for a hundred fifty days.

> And the flood was forty days upon the earth; and the waters increased, and bare up the ark, and it was lift up above the earth. And the waters prevailed, and were increased greatly upon the earth; and the ark went upon the face of the waters. And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the earth; and all the high hills, that were under the whole heaven, were covered. Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered. And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth, and every man: All in whose nostrils was the breath of life, of all that was in the dry land, died. And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark. And the waters prevailed upon the earth an hundred and fifty days. (Genesis 7:17-24)

Now we all know the Father did promise that the world would not be destroyed by water again, so we can rest knowing the we will not all drown, But He does show how it will be when I am revealed.

> And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions. And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their power was to hurt men five months. (Revelation 9:1-10)

There is a hundred fifty days, or five months. There are thirty days to each month in God's calendar. Now I am not sure if this begins once I am revealed, or if I will be revealed during or after this period of time, but I do know that this is one part of the heavens that are soon to start shaking. This was first introduced in the fifth book, or precept, At midnight I will rise, for those that want to learn more about this.

Notice how there will be some that will seek death but will not find it. Yes, this is literally telling us that there will be people that will want to die because it will be truly bad but won't be able to. Then we are told that death will flea from them. That is when people start reading the books that the Father and I have written. This is also when people will too over come the first death as explained in the last book or precept. The first death is when we all got kicked out of the garden of Eden. That is the death that will flee from many. This is when people will begin to seek the Father with all of their heart, soul, mind, and strength. And once people begin to do this, the Father will put them back into the Garden as me, and then eternal life is upon them as well.

Okay, I feel I am beating the days of Noah to death, so it is time to move on. Now I am going to go over a few things, however I am not going to go into as much detail from here on out because we are already over 14000 words just for this chapter, and I need to get this book done. Now I want to jump back to the sixth day of creation, when God said let us make man in our image, in our likeness.

> And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every

> fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:26-31)

First thing we need to think about is who is God the Father talking to when He said let us make man in our image, after our likeness? He is not talking to man. Now let us think about the dominion that he gives man over the beast just after He said let us make man in our image, after our likeness. This is because we, man are the beast that they have dominion over.

> I said in mine heart concerning the estate of the sons of men, that God might manifest them, and that they might see that they themselves are beasts. (Ecclesiastes 3:18)

> So foolish was I, and ignorant: I was as a beast before thee. (Psalm 73:22)

> But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old

world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. For

> when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. (2 Peter 2:1-22)

As we started to explain in the second book or precept and beyond, in fact, even in this book, my brother was the ram with his horn caught in the thicket.

> And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together. And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood. And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son. And the angel of the Lord called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me. And

> Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son. (Genesis 22:8-13)

Yes, I did this very thing, but it was a spiritual sacrifice with my son and my brother, not a physical sacrifice. We are also counted as the beast spoken of in Revelation.

> And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:11-18)

Notice how the number of this beast is Six hundred threescore and six. Man was created on the sixth day. Now without showing all of this again, this beast has seven heads. These heads are the seven continents of the planet. We have covered this a lot throughout the books, so I do not want to cover it again. But then we need to think about how He told us to be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth. Well, we all are His children so what He is really saying is have sex, make babies, and make my family bigger. I mention this because we will be discussing what marriage really is a little later in this chapter.

Another thing we need to bring up about being made in their image and likeness is that whatever happens in the heavens is what happens here on earth. We are told to pray in this very manner.

> And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:5-13)

Now I want to talk about Israel, and why people call this the holy land. Do you know that the country of Israel did not exist before 1948. Let us do a quick google search so that we can see and hear this. If they have it or have named it in heaven, it is here on earth because it will be done on earth as it is in heaven.

> *Non-existent Before 1948, Israel was non-existent as a nation after the tribes were scattered around Europe and the Middle East. Several internal and external efforts were put in place to reestablish the nation of Israel, but these were fruitless. What Was Israel Before 1948? How Did the Nation of Israel Come …timelessmyths.com/stories/what-was-israel-before-1948/ timelessmyths.com/stories/what-was-israel-before-1948/*

As you can see and hear, the country of Israel wasn't even a country before 1948. I will say this though. There is a seventy-year time talked about in the King James Bible.

> And it shall come to pass, when seventy years are accomplished, that I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation, saith the Lord, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans, and will make it perpetual desolations. And I will bring upon that land all my words which I have pronounced against it, even all that is written in this book, which Jeremiah hath prophesied against all the nations. For many nations and great kings shall serve themselves of them also: and I will recompense them according to their deeds, and according to the works of their own hands. (Jeremiah 25:12-14)

> For thus saith the Lord, That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform my good word toward you, in causing you to return

> to this place. For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the Lord, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. (Jeremiah 29:10-13)

> In the first year of Darius the son of Ahasuerus, of the seed of the Medes, which was made king over the realm of the Chaldeans; In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem. (Daniel 9:1-2)

Beings how we now know that the King James Bible is not a history book, I think we can figure this is talking about seventy years after the country Israel was established. This would have taken us to the year of 2018. This was the year I was baptized in the Jorden River in the country Isreal. This is also the year the second book was published, Precept two, Behold a greater than Jonas is here! Which I finished the manuscript to that book the second time in Israel that year. There is some more food for thought for you.

I told you all that we would later be doing some more calculation of the February 11th date. Needles to say, I was wrong about that day, but as I am writing this new chapter, the Father did get me to think about it some more. The 2300 days is from the date of the publication of the 3rd book. I won't show it again, nor will I give that date. But I will show two sections of the bible that are engrafted together even though they are in completely different areas of the bible.

> And the Lord said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and

that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof. And to the others he said in mine hearing, Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary. Then they began at the ancient men which were before the house. And he said unto them, Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city. And it came to pass, while they were slaying them, and I was left, that I fell upon my face, and cried, and said, Ah Lord God! wilt thou destroy all the residue of Israel in thy pouring out of thy fury upon Jerusalem? Then said he unto me, The iniquity of the house of Israel and Judah is exceeding great, and the land is full of blood, and the city full of perverseness: for they say, The Lord hath forsaken the earth, and the Lord seeth not. (Ezekiel 9:4-9)

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. (Revelation 9:1-4)

Normally I do not do things like this, I usually show you all exactly what I am talking about. But this time I am only referring to things that have already been covered, so that is why I am doing it this way. Hopefully you have been listening to what you're reading or hearing. And if not, then I am telling you to do your homework.

But what I want to do now is listen to what the Bible tells us about Israel. Israel first came about when the Father changed Jacob's name to Israel.

> And God appeared unto Jacob again, when he came out of Padanaram, and blessed him. And God said unto him, Thy name is Jacob: thy name shall not be called any more Jacob, but Israel shall be thy name: and he called his name Israel. And God said unto him, I am God Almighty: be fruitful and multiply; a nation and a company of nations shall be of thee, and kings shall come out of thy loins; And the land which I gave Abraham and Isaac, to thee I will give it, and to thy seed after thee will I give the land. And God went up from him in the place where he talked with him. (Genesis 35:9-13)

Just a quick side note here, the loins that are mentioned here are the loins of the mind.

> Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; (1 Peter 1:13)

Now let us listen to a few times that we can hear our Father talk about people being Israel, and not the country Israel.

> Ye are the children of the Lord your God: ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between

your eyes for the dead. For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing. (Deuteronomy 14:1-3)

When the Lord thy God shall bring thee into the land whither thou goest to possess it, and hath cast out many nations before thee, the Hittites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, seven nations greater and mightier than thou; And when the Lord thy God shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them: Neither shalt thou make marriages with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son. For they will turn away thy son from following me, that they may serve other gods: so will the anger of the Lord be kindled against you, and destroy thee suddenly. But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire. For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God: the Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth. The Lord did not set his love upon you, nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the fewest of all people: But because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers, hath the Lord brought you out with a mighty hand, and redeemed you out of the house of bondmen, from the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt.

Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations; And repayeth them that hate him to their face, to destroy them: he will not be slack to him that hateth him, he will repay him to his face. Thou shalt therefore keep the commandments, and the statutes, and the judgments, which I command thee this day, to do them. Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the Lord thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he sware unto thy fathers: And he will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee: he will also bless the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep, in the land which he sware unto thy fathers to give thee. Thou shalt be blessed above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle. And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. And thou shalt consume all the people which the Lord thy God shall deliver thee; thine eye shall have no pity upon them: neither shalt thou serve their gods; for that will be a snare unto thee. If thou shalt say in thine heart, These nations are more than I; how can I dispossess them? Thou shalt not be afraid of them: but shalt well remember what the Lord thy God did unto Pharaoh, and unto all Egypt; The great temptations which thine eyes saw, and the signs, and the wonders, and the mighty hand, and the stretched out arm, whereby the Lord thy God brought thee out: so shall the Lord thy God do unto all the people of

whom thou art afraid. Moreover the Lord thy God will send the hornet among them, until they that are left, and hide themselves from thee, be destroyed. Thou shalt not be affrighted at them: for the Lord thy God is among you, a mighty God and terrible. And the Lord thy God will put out those nations before thee by little and little: thou mayest not consume them at once, lest the beasts of the field increase upon thee. But the Lord thy God shall deliver them unto thee, and shall destroy them with a mighty destruction, until they be destroyed. And he shall deliver their kings into thine hand, and thou shalt destroy their name from under heaven: there shall no man be able to stand before thee, until thou have destroyed them. The graven images of their gods shall ye burn with fire: thou shalt not desire the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it unto thee, lest thou be snared therin: for it is an abomination to the Lord thy God. Neither shalt thou bring an abomination into thine house, lest thou be a cursed thing like it: but thou shalt utterly detest it, and thou shalt utterly abhor it; for it is a cursed thing. (Deuteronomy (7:1-26)

Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the name of the Lord; praise him, O ye servants of the Lord. Ye that stand in the house of the Lord, in the courts of the house of our God. Praise the Lord; for the Lord is good: sing praises unto his name; for it is pleasant. For the Lord hath chosen Jacob unto himself, and Israel for his peculiar treasure. (Psalm 135:1-4)

And the king said unto him, How many times shall I adjure thee that thou tell me nothing but that which is true in the name of the Lord? And he said, I saw all Israel scattered upon the hills, as sheep that have not

a shepherd: and the Lord said, These have no master: let them return every man to his house in peace. (1 Kings 22:16-17)

Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith the Lord. Therefore thus saith the Lord God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith the Lord. And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. (Jeremiah 23:1-3)

The word that the Lord spake against Babylon and against the land of the Chaldeans by Jeremiah the prophet. Declare ye among the nations, and publish, and set up a standard; publish, and conceal not: say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded, Merodach is broken in pieces; her idols are confounded, her images are broken in pieces. For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast. In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the Lord their God. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten. My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill,

they have forgotten their restingplace. All that found them have devoured them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the Lord, the habitation of justice, even the Lord, the hope of their fathers. (Jeremiah 50:1-7)

These be the words which Moses spake unto all Israel on this side Jordan in the wilderness, in the plain over against the Red sea, between Paran, and Tophel, and Laban, and Hazeroth, and Dizahab. (There are eleven days' journey from Horeb by the way of mount Seir unto Kadeshbarnea.) And it came to pass in the fortieth year, in the eleventh month, on the first day of the month, that Moses spake unto the children of Israel, according unto all that the Lord had given him in commandment unto them; After he had slain Sihon the king of the Amorites, which dwelt in Heshbon, and Og the king of Bashan, which dwelt at Astaroth in Edrei: On this side Jordan, in the land of Moab, began Moses to declare this law, saying, The Lord our God spake unto us in Horeb, saying, Ye have dwelt long enough in this mount: Turn you, and take your journey, and go to the mount of the Amorites, and unto all the places nigh thereunto, in the plain, in the hills, and in the vale, and in the south, and by the sea side, to the land of the Canaanites, and unto Lebanon, unto the great river, the river Euphrates. Behold, I have set the land before you: go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them. And I spake unto you at that time, saying, I am not able to bear you myself alone: The Lord your God hath multiplied you, and, behold, ye are this day as the stars of heaven for multitude. (Deuteronomy 1:1-10)

> And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. The remnant shall return, even the remnant of Jacob, unto the mighty God. For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. (Isaiah 10:20-22)

As you can see and hear, Israel is a people and not a country or a nation. As shown in previous books, one person can represent an entire nation because it is the type of person, and not the person himself or herself. Remember Jacob was just one nation in the womb of Rebekah.

> And Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah to wife, the daughter of Bethuel the Syrian of Padanaram, the sister to Laban the Syrian. And Isaac intreated the Lord for his wife, because she was barren: and the Lord was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. And the children struggled together within her; and she said, If it be so, why am I thus? And she went to enquire of the Lord. And the Lord said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger. And when her days to be delivered were fulfilled, behold, there were twins in her womb. And the first came out red, all over like an hairy garment; and they called his name Esau. And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel; and his name was called Jacob: and Isaac was threescore years old when she bare them. (Genesis 25:20-26)

Jacob turns out to be renamed Israel, and Israel is the youngest of the two. Yes, this makes me want to write all about that, but we need to cut back because I haven't even got to the entire point of this chapter yet. The only reason we have a country Israel is because we are made in their image, after their likeness. So why do people call Israel the holy land when Israel didn't even become a country until 1948?

But now we are going to be looking at something else pertaining to Israel. We are going to be talking a bit about Moses leading the Israelites out of Egypt. Especially now that we know the King James Bible is not a history book.

> And the Lord said, I have surely seen the affliction of my people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows; And I am come down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, and to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large, unto a land flowing with milk and honey; unto the place of the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites. Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel is come unto me: and I have also seen the oppression wherewith the Egyptians oppress them. Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou mayest bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt. (Exodus 3:7-10)

Something that I have shown in previous books or precepts, we are told even though a person is dead, he or she still speaks.

> By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. (Hebrews 11:4)

So, even if you want to think of Moses being dead, he still speaketh. The reason we bring this up is because I have told you all about me seeing the flood that covers the earth. What is that flood's name?

> Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

As you can see and hear, spiritually speaking, Egypt covers the entire earth and I can testify to this because I have seen him or it from 32,000 feet, as explained in the fourth book and beyond. The point I am trying to make is that all those that refuse to learn of the Father, will be done unto just as the Israelites that refused to listen when the Father was allowing Moses to lead them out of Egypt. I will not even try to post all of that in this chapter, but if you want to find out more about this, read or listen to the first five books of the Bible.

Okay, we do need to talk about something else about Egypt. I was recently listening to the bible as I do and got to the book of Exodus. As I am listening to the plagues, it dawned on me, later in what man calls the books of Moses, we are told that God will raise one like Moses.

> The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; (Deuteronomy 18:15)

I have listened to this many times, but tonight as I was driving, it hit me like a ton of bricks. Yes, I have known this is me that we are being told that will rise. But now knowing that the bible is not a history book, it dawned on me, what we can learn from this.

The first thing I thought about is how there are ten plagues. Maybe this means I will be writing ten books in total. Okay, that means I have two more to write after this one. I thought about this

because when I flew my brother up to Alaska in December of 2023, he had mentioned that he thought I was going to write ten books. In one of our conversations, the topic of how many books will I write came up. And he kept saying that for some reason he was thinking ten. I told him that he was just thinking of the ten plagues. This was before the seventh book was written so I was still in a sour mood about not being revealed yet. I was saying I hope not.

But to go with this ten-book logic, I got to thinking, it isn't the world that has been rejecting me, it is the Father hardening the hearts of many so that when the big one happens, those that will be the dead in Christ that are to rise, will rise. Just like God hardened Pharaoh's heart. Then on the tenth plague, Pharaoh let the Israelites go. Now I do know that if this is the case, the ten plagues will not be the same as they are described in the Bible. Those are listed the way they are so that we realize the power of God and form a genuine fear of Him.

If you know of these plagues, then you also know that the way they are explained, these took place over a period of time. These all did not just happen in a few months. If you are not familiar with these plagues, I suggest you reading and or listening to the book of Exodus. But then listen to how people refused to trust the Father. On a continuing basis, the Israelites kept complaining because they were worried that they would die following Moses. Not trusting in the Father to provide what they needed, and not what they wanted.

Now I want to talk about the dumb ass speaking and what we can learn from this. If you're not familiar with what I am talking about, we will post the lesson.

> And God came unto Balaam at night, and said unto him, If the men come to call thee, rise up, and go with them; but yet the word which I shall say unto thee, that shalt thou do. And Balaam rose up in the morning, and saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab. And God's anger was kindled because he went: and the angel of the Lord stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his

ass, and his two servants were with him. And the ass saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way. But the angel of the Lord stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall being on this side, and a wall on that side. And when the ass saw the angel of the Lord, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam's foot against the wall: and he smote her again. And the angel of the Lord went further, and stood in a narrow place, where was no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left. And when the ass saw the angel of the Lord, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff. And the Lord opened the mouth of the ass, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times? And Balaam said unto the ass, Because thou hast mocked me: I would there were a sword in mine hand, for now would I kill thee. And the ass said unto Balaam, Am not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I was thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? and he said, Nay. Then the Lord opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face. And the angel of the Lord said unto him, Wherefore hast thou smitten thine ass these three times? behold, I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me: And the ass saw me, and turned from me these three times: unless she had turned from me, surely now also I had slain thee, and saved her alive. And Balaam said unto the angel of the Lord, I have sinned; for I knew not that thou stoodest in the way against me: now

> therefore, if it displease thee, I will get me back again. (Numbers 22:20-32)

I am even going to show how it is suggested that we go back into the Old Testament and find this story so that we can learn from it. No, it is not literally saying go back to the Old Testament, but as shown in the last book, this is like a subliminal message. Why would we be told about it if the Father didn't want us to learn from the lesson.

> Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. (2 Peter 2:15-16)

First thing is I do believe animals can see things which are invisible to the human eyes. Next is how we can hear that Balaam was disobeying the Father, but yet the angel was there to stop him from continuing with his iniquity. Then notice how Balaam was even stopped three times before the eyes of Balaam saw the angel with the sword in his hand. Then notice how the angel said that if the ass wouldn't have turned you from me, I would have slain thee and saved the ass.

I bring this up because I am almost willing to bet that everybody that is old enough to read this book has encountered something like this at least once in their lifetimes. No, not an ass talking to you, however when you tried to do something, something kept happening in which prevented you from doing what you wanted to accomplish.

Now I am going to tell you about a conversation I had with Cathy a couple of weeks ago. Cathy runs a home daycare, and one of the mothers was getting ready to move to Denver, Colorado. All of what I am getting ready to tell you about didn't happen in just a few days, it took place over a few weeks. However, when this woman was about a week from going, her car broke down. When this happened, she

was only working a part time job. While her car was in the process of being fixed, she found a better paying part time job. Then when her car got fixed, she started to plan her move again. Then her car broke down again with a completely different problem. While the car was getting repaired again, she got a promotion to fulltime, with a bump in pay. Then the car was fixed again and the mechanic told her that he wouldn't trust taking the car to Denver. At about the same time, her sister, the family member she was going to move in with, told her about something in Denver that this woman didn't really want her child around, but she still was planning on going.

I told Cathy that it sounds like this woman is being told no, don't go. No, I can't be certain, but as I told you all in the sixth book, Precept six, Declaring the end from the beginning, the Father is talking to everybody, all day long every day of the year. And I truly feel that is exactly what she was being told. I even told Cathy that if she moves to Denver, something is going to go wrong. And as you heard what the angel told Balaam, she might not have even made it to Denver. As far as I know, she is still in the same town, she hasn't moved.

Now we are going to be looking at one complete chapter in Matthew, so that we can really show how the King James Bible is not a history book. Really try to listen to all of this chapter and what is being said.

> Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, Saying The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the

synagogues, And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted. But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor! Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and

cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto

> thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. (Matthew 23:1-39)

I want to draw your attention closer to the end of this chapter. Listen how we hear, And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. And beyond that. Now we all know that God can't lie, right?

> In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began; (Titus 1:2)

> That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: (Hebrews 6:18)

Did you notice how we can hear all of this will come upon this generation? Here is my question for you, why would we be punished for what our fathers did. God tells us that the son will not die for the father's sins, and the father will not die for his son's sins.

> The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers: every man shall be put to death for his own sin. (Deuteronomy 24:16)

> The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father

> bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him. (Ezekiel 18:20)

Well, God cannot lie so who could He be talking about when we hear all these things will come upon this generation? So, let us think about it, everything that we are told to look for in Matthew 24, Mark 13, Luke 17 and 21 has or is happening right now in this generation. So, that means we are to learn from the prophets that have been sent to us through the King James Bible. Everyone is accountable for their own sins that are of age.

Just a couple of things I want to talk about but not exactly the very thing that is mentioned when we read or listen to the scriptures. I am going to only post the first seventeen verses relating to the first thing, leprosy. I won't post all of the instructions because it will just take up too much time and we need to be getting this done.

> And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron, saying, When a man shall have in the skin of his flesh a rising, a scab, or bright spot, and it be in the skin of his flesh like the plague of leprosy; then he shall be brought unto Aaron the priest, or unto one of his sons the priests: And the priest shall look on the plague in the skin of the flesh: and when the hair in the plague is turned white, and the plague in sight be deeper than the skin of his flesh, it is a plague of leprosy: and the priest shall look on him, and pronounce him unclean. If the bright spot be white in the skin of his flesh, and in sight be not deeper than the skin, and the hair thereof be not turned white; then the priest shall shut up him that hath the plague seven days: And the priest shall look on him the seventh day: and, behold, if the plague in his sight be at a stay, and the plague spread not in the skin; then the priest shall shut him up seven days more: And the priest shall look on him

> again the seventh day: and, behold, if the plague be somewhat dark, and the plague spread not in the skin, the priest shall pronounce him clean: it is but a scab: and he shall wash his clothes, and be clean. But if the scab spread much abroad in the skin, after that he hath been seen of the priest for his cleansing, he shall be seen of the priest again. And if the priest see that, behold, the scab spreadeth in the skin, then the priest shall pronounce him unclean: it is a leprosy. When the plague of leprosy is in a man, then he shall be brought unto the priest; And the priest shall see him: and, behold, if the rising be white in the skin, and it have turned the hair white, and there be quick raw flesh in the rising; It is an old leprosy in the skin of his flesh, and the priest shall pronounce him unclean, and shall not shut him up: for he is unclean. And if a leprosy break out abroad in the skin, and the leprosy cover all the skin of him that hath the plague from his head even to his foot, wheresoever the priest looketh; Then the priest shall consider: and, behold, if the leprosy have covered all his flesh, he shall pronounce him clean that hath the plague: it is all turned white: he is clean. But when raw flesh appeareth in him, he shall be unclean. And the priest shall see the raw flesh, and pronounce him to be unclean: for the raw flesh is unclean: it is a leprosy. Or if the raw flesh turn again, and be changed unto white, he shall come unto the priest; And the priest shall see him: and, behold, if the plague be turned into white; then the priest shall pronounce him clean that hath the plague: he is clean. (Leviticus 13:1-17)

The first thing that comes to mind when I relate this to our very own lives is something like chickenpox or Measles. Something like

that in which you would keep your children, or even maybe yourself away from others.

Then I want to talk about when a man has a running issue.

> And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When any man hath a running issue out of his flesh, because of his issue he is unclean. And this shall be his uncleanness in his issue: whether his flesh run with his issue, or his flesh be stopped from his issue, it is his uncleanness. Every bed, whereon he lieth that hath the issue, is unclean: and every thing, whereon he sitteth, shall be unclean. And whosoever toucheth his bed shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And he that sitteth on any thing whereon he sat that hath the issue shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And he that toucheth the flesh of him that hath the issue shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And if he that hath the issue spit upon him that is clean; then he shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And what saddle soever he rideth upon that hath the issue shall be unclean. And whosoever toucheth any thing that was under him shall be unclean until the even: and he that beareth any of those things shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And whomsoever he toucheth that hath the issue, and hath not rinsed his hands in water, he shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be unclean until the even. And the vessel of earth, that he toucheth which hath the issue, shall be broken: and every vessel of wood shall be rinsed in water. And when he that hath an issue is

> cleansed of his issue; then he shall number to himself seven days for his cleansing, and wash his clothes, and bathe his flesh in running water, and shall be clean. And on the eighth day he shall take to him two turtledoves, or two young pigeons, and come before the Lord unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and give them unto the priest: And the priest shall offer them, the one for a sin offering, and the other for a burnt offering; and the priest shall make an atonement for him before the Lord for his issue. (Leviticus 15:1-15)

This would be diarrhea, and of course, when one has this issue, it is always better to just stay home. Notice that everything that is touched by this person that has this running issue is to wash everything he or she comes into contact with.

Okay now we are going to get to the main reason for this entire chapter. We are going to talk about the relationship between Mary and me. Now I told you all since I unblocked her and we both apologized to one another, we started getting along better than we had. It seemed like we had grown closer together even though we are eight thousand miles apart.

Then one day, I started hearing the Father tell me that I am married to her. I am like, wait a second Father, I haven't had sex with her. I can't be married to her; I am married to you Father. This went on for a couple of days and yes, I was even telling Mary about what I was being told.

Now I have shown you all what a marriage is in our Father's eyes. There is not one spot in the Bible that anyone goes to a priest, pastor, preacher, or judge to make a marriage legal. In fact, we are told that sex is a marriage, we just need to listen to this.

> But king Solomon loved many strange women, together with the daughter of Pharaoh, women of the Moabites, Ammonites, Edomites, Zidonians,

> and Hittites: Of the nations concerning which the Lord said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall not go in to them, neither shall they come in unto you: for surely they will turn away your heart after their gods: Solomon clave unto these in love. And he had seven hundred wives, princesses, and three hundred concubines: and his wives turned away his heart. For it came to pass, when Solomon was old, that his wives turned away his heart after other gods: and his heart was not perfect with the Lord his God, as was the heart of David his father. For Solomon went after Ashtoreth the goddess of the Zidonians, and after Milcom the abomination of the Ammonites. And Solomon did evil in the sight of the Lord, and went not fully after the Lord, as did David his father. (1 Kings 11:1-6)

I am not going to break it all down again. As pointed out in the previous books or precepts, the only commandment that the Father gave about wives is that we are not to have to many that our heart turns away from Him. If by chance you want to understand this better than read or listen to the second book, Behold a greater than Jonas is here.

> Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold. (Deuteronomy 17:17)

And there is one area in the scriptures that tell us that when a man lays with a harlot, they become one body. There is no way anyone can tell me that consensual sex is not marriage. Let us listen to how it is worded for when man and woman become one flesh, and then we will listen to how it is the same way when a man lays with a harlot.

> And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? (Matthew 19:5)
>
> What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh. (1 Corinthians 6:16)

So, ever since the incident happened with the woman or the servant and or vessel of God happened in West Memphis Arkansas, I knew that I couldn't have sex with anyone. But than the Father ask me what He had me show everyone in the first book. As I recall Father you had me show everyone that you are married unto us, even after you gave us a bill of divorcement. I am going to show you all where He gives us a bill of divorcement, but notice just a little later in the same chapter, He states that He is married unto us.

> And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also. And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with stocks. And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath not turned unto me with her whole heart, but feignedly, saith the Lord. And the Lord said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah. Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger for ever. Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every

> green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord. Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: (Jeremiah 3:8-14)

> Thus saith the Lord, Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom I have put away? or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you? Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves, and for your transgressions is your mother put away. Wherefore, when I came, was there no man? when I called, was there none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because there is no water, and dieth for thirst. I clothe the heavens with blackness, and I make sackcloth their covering. (Isaiah 50:1-3)

Then I tell the Father you had me show everyone that the divorce does not become final until the end of the world. Then He ask me, David how many people have I had sex with. My reply, nobody Father you are Spirit and not human. Then He tells me to think about this, what does a husbandman do for his wife. And I will admit, I had to think about this for a few minutes. But then my reply is that he is there for his wife for everything. Then I go to say that he gives her, moral support, spiritual support, mental support, financial support, and emotional support.

Then He tells me to think about the one area in the Bible that baffles me about sex making a marriage. Yes, there is one lesson in the scriptures that does baffle me because it is clearly stated that the sex did not constitute the marriage. And now I am going to show this lesson so that you all can learn from it as I just recently did myself. To

do this though, I need to post the entire chapter of 2 Samuel 11 and the part of 2 Samuel 12.

> And it came to pass, after the year was expired, at the time when kings go forth to battle, that David sent Joab, and his servants with him, and all Israel; and they destroyed the children of Ammon, and besieged Rabbah. But David tarried still at Jerusalem. And it came to pass in an eveningtide, that David arose from off his bed, and walked upon the roof of the king's house: and from the roof he saw a woman washing herself; and the woman was very beautiful to look upon. And David sent and enquired after the woman. And one said, Is not this Bathsheba, the daughter of Eliam, the wife of Uriah the Hittite? And David sent messengers, and took her; and she came in unto him, and he lay with her; for she was purified from her uncleanness: and she returned unto her house. And the woman conceived, and sent and told David, and said, I am with child. And David sent to Joab, saying, Send me Uriah the Hittite. And Joab sent Uriah to David. And when Uriah was come unto him, David demanded of him how Joab did, and how the people did, and how the war prospered. And David said to Uriah, Go down to thy house, and wash thy feet. And Uriah departed out of the king's house, and there followed him a mess of meat from the king. But Uriah slept at the door of the king's house with all the servants of his lord, and went not down to his house. And when they had told David, saying, Uriah went not down unto his house, David said unto Uriah, Camest thou not from thy journey? why then didst thou not go down unto thine house? And Uriah said unto David, The ark, and Israel, and Judah, abide in tents; and my lord Joab, and the servants of my lord,

are encamped in the open fields; shall I then go into mine house, to eat and to drink, and to lie with my wife? as thou livest, and as thy soul liveth, I will not do this thing. And David said to Uriah, Tarry here to day also, and to morrow I will let thee depart. So Uriah abode in Jerusalem that day, and the morrow. And when David had called him, he did eat and drink before him; and he made him drunk: and at even he went out to lie on his bed with the servants of his lord, but went not down to his house. And it came to pass in the morning, that David wrote a letter to Joab, and sent it by the hand of Uriah. And he wrote in the letter, saying, Set ye Uriah in the forefront of the hottest battle, and retire ye from him, that he may be smitten, and die. And it came to pass, when Joab observed the city, that he assigned Uriah unto a place where he knew that valiant men were. And the men of the city went out, and fought with Joab: and there fell some of the people of the servants of David; and Uriah the Hittite died also. Then Joab sent and told David all the things concerning the war; And charged the messenger, saying, When thou hast made an end of telling the matters of the war unto the king, And if so be that the king's wrath arise, and he say unto thee, Wherefore approached ye so nigh unto the city when ye did fight? knew ye not that they would shoot from the wall? Who smote Abimelech the son of Jerubbesheth? did not a woman cast a piece of a millstone upon him from the wall, that he died in Thebez? why went ye nigh the wall? then say thou, Thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also. So the messenger went, and came and shewed David all that Joab had sent him for. And the messenger said unto David, Surely the men prevailed against us, and came out unto us into the field, and we were upon them

even unto the entering of the gate. And the shooters shot from off the wall upon thy servants; and some of the king's servants be dead, and thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also. Then David said unto the messenger, Thus shalt thou say unto Joab, Let not this thing displease thee, for the sword devoureth one as well as another: make thy battle more strong against the city, and overthrow it: and encourage thou him. And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband. And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son. But the thing that David had done displeased the Lord. (2 Samuel 11:1-27)

And the Lord sent Nathan unto David. And he came unto him, and said unto him, There were two men in one city; the one rich, and the other poor. The rich man had exceeding many flocks and herds: But the poor man had nothing, save one little ewe lamb, which he had bought and nourished up: and it grew up together with him, and with his children; it did eat of his own meat, and drank of his own cup, and lay in his bosom, and was unto him as a daughter. And there came a traveller unto the rich man, and he spared to take of his own flock and of his own herd, to dress for the wayfaring man that was come unto him; but took the poor man's lamb, and dressed it for the man that was come to him. And David's anger was greatly kindled against the man; and he said to Nathan, As the Lord liveth, the man that hath done this thing shall surely die: And he shall restore the lamb fourfold, because he did this thing, and because he had no pity. And Nathan said to David, Thou art the man. Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, I anointed

thee king over Israel, and I delivered thee out of the hand of Saul; And I gave thee thy master's house, and thy master's wives into thy bosom, and gave thee the house of Israel and of Judah; and if that had been too little, I would moreover have given unto thee such and such things. Wherefore hast thou despised the commandment of the Lord, to do evil in his sight? thou hast killed Uriah the Hittite with the sword, and hast taken his wife to be thy wife, and hast slain him with the sword of the children of Ammon.Now therefore the sword shall never depart from thine house; because thou hast despised me, and hast taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be thy wife. Thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will raise up evil against thee out of thine own house, and I will take thy wives before thine eyes, and give them unto thy neighbour, and he shall lie with thy wives in the sight of this sun. For thou didst it secretly: but I will do this thing before all Israel, and before the sun. And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the Lord. And Nathan said unto David, The Lord also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die. Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the Lord to blaspheme, the child also that is born unto thee shall surely die. And Nathan departed unto his house. And the Lord struck the child that Uriah's wife bare unto David, and it was very sick. David therefore besought God for the child; and David fasted, and went in, and lay all night upon the earth. And the elders of his house arose, and went to him, to raise him up from the earth: but he would not, neither did he eat bread with them. And it came to pass on the seventh day, that the child died. And the servants of David feared to tell him that the child was dead: for they said, Behold, while the child was yet alive, we spake

> unto him, and he would not hearken unto our voice: how will he then vex himself, if we tell him that the child is dead? But when David saw that his servants whispered, David perceived that the child was dead: therefore David said unto his servants, Is the child dead? And they said, He is dead. Then David arose from the earth, and washed, and anointed himselfand changed his apparel, and came into the house of the Lord, and worshipped: then he came to his own house; and when he required, they set bread before him, and he did eat. Then said his servants unto him, What thing is this that thou hast done? thou didst fast and weep for the child, while it was alive; but when the child was dead, thou didst rise and eat bread. And he said, While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept: for I said, Who can tell whether God will be gracious to me, that the child may live? But now he is dead, wherefore should I fast? can I bring him back again? I shall go to him, but he shall not return to me. And David comforted Bathsheba his wife, and went in unto her, and lay with her: and she bare a son, and he called his name Solomon: and the Lord loved him. (2 Samuel 1-24)

Now I am not going to break all of this down, I just wanted you all to hear how David found Bathsheba to be beautiful, then he lusted after this woman. She even committed adultery on her husband. When this happened, she even got pregnant. Then David sent Uriah, her husband off to the hardest battle of the war so that he would be killed.

Then we hear that the Father is mad at David for this. We do not hear that the Father is mad because David coveted another man's wife. We don't hear how the Father was mad that David lusted after another man's wife. We don't hear that the Father is mad because Bathsheba committed adultery on her husband. It was when David

sent her husband off to war to be killed is what made the Father mad. We can hear that this is what made the Father mad when Nathen was confronting David of what he had done.

I did a google search on this and there is no way that I will post what I found. I read things that so called people of knowledge of the Bible posted. They say David was ashamed because he committed adultery. I have listened to this lesson over a hundred times, and the scriptures do not teach that David was ashamed of committing adultery with Bathsheba. Why would he be? The scriptures clearly say that we can have more than one wife. Just not so many wives that our heart falls away from God the Father. I have actually come to the realization that google knows nothing about the scriptures, not the people that enter the info into google.

Just a quick side note here. We have shown you all that God did not say that we could not have more than one wife. We are told that we are not to have so many wives that our heart falls away from Him. Beings how the King James Bible is not a history book, and a book of lessons, why do we hear about many having more than one wife, or in some cases, more than one husband? It is so we can learn that we are the people that have more than one wife or husband. Again, it is about what we can learn from what we are reading and or hearing, not what we can learn about it.

But that is not what I want to focus on. I want to talk about how Bathsheba didn't become David's wife until after her husband was killed and then she moved in with David. *And when the wife of Uriah heard that Uriah her husband was dead, she mourned for her husband. And when the mourning was past, David sent and fetched her to his house, and she became his wife, and bare him a son.*

Clearly, they had already had sex, and she is with child when she moved in with David. But notice how she then became his wife after moving in with David. You see, she couldn't become David's wife while her husband was yet alive.

> Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over

> a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. (Romans 7:1-3)

Do you all remember when I told you all that I didn't find out there was a man in Mary's life until just a few days before my trip to the Philippines? This is why it really made me feel like something was wrong. I will not interfere with a marriage, especially not spiritually kill her husband so that she can be my wife. But at the same time, I was wondering if this was what I was supposed to do.

> Then all the captains of the forces, and Johanan the son of Kareah, and Jezaniah the son of Hoshaiah, and all the people from the least even unto the greatest, came near, And said unto Jeremiah the prophet, Let, we beseech thee, our supplication be accepted before thee, and pray for us unto the Lord thy God, even for all this remnant; (for we are left but a few of many, as thine eyes do behold us:) That the Lord thy God may shew us the way wherein we may walk, and the thing that we may do. Then Jeremiah the prophet said unto them, I have heard you; behold, I will pray unto the Lord your God according to your words; and it shall come to pass, that whatsoever thing the Lord shall answer you, I will declare it unto you; I will keep nothing back from you. Then they said to Jeremiah, The Lord be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shall send thee to us. Whether it

> be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the Lord our God, to whom we send thee; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the Lord our God. (Jeremiah 42:1-6)

If that is what the Father wants me to do, then I will do whatever He commands of me so that it will be well with Him. He comes first in every decision of mine. And yes, it scared the living daylights out of me, as the saying goes. But as you all know, he and I got along pretty well. And even though I told him all that the Father told me to do, but he seemed to understand because both of them could tell by my works, I had no interest in being intimate with Mary

But that was before the trip. So, when the Father started to tell me that I am married to her, I started to think about how He told me to give her my heart and to fall head over heels for her. And how He told me that this was true love. And then I started to think about how good it made me feel to be there for her when she went through the surgery, even though I wasn't physically there. Oh, it made me feel so good.

Then He goes on to tell me that you know that you truly did help her through all of that. Then He ask me if I remember how she told me that she got commission from all the promoting I did with the books. Then he ask me what she told me. Well Father, she told me that I have been helping her and her daughter out since we started talking. And of course, Father, you know that she helped me just by talking to me. Then He tells me that we have been married pretty much since we started talking. You two had been taking care of each other, morally, spiritually, emotionally, mentally, and financially. And it didn't and doesn't require you to be there physically.

Then He goes on to tell me to think about how well I understand the scriptures and how He is married to us. And my reply is, obviously Father you take care of everybody. You're the One that gives everybody the knowledge to be able to do what they do. If you give people the knowledge to become rich, then you also keep people from the knowledge of how to become rich.

> But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. (Deuteronomy 8:18)

This is where we realize that everybody has their own laws, rules, ordinances, testimonies, judgments, and commandments. It is the Father in which gives everybody knowledge and or the skills to be able to do what they do. And if that means keeping a person from being able to get a high-class degree of some sort so that they will work behind a counter of some sort, then that is what He does. He does this so that we can all have the many conveniences of life as we have today. And you are alive and reading or listening to this book, so He has taken care of you all of your life. He does not take care of us so that we can have all the desires of the flesh, but He does give us what we need.

Now we are going to be talking about something here that will seem to lead us away from the topic at hand, and in all actuality will, but will at the same time bring us right back to where we are pausing. What I want to talk about is how the works were finished since the foundation of the world.

> Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. (Hebrews 4:1-3)

I know I have mentioned this before, but when the Father told these holy men to write the scriptures in the format that they did, He had them write it as it was past tense. Because to Him, it was and is

beings how He is all knowing. But at the same time, this also shows the power and dominion that He has over us. Now I have told people about Him having dominion over us and oh boy, the things I was told. One of the biggest statements that I heard is, "nobody has dominion over me". And to that I say oh yes, He does. He has the dominion to sell you to the kings talked about in the last book or precept. He is the one with the ultimate dominion over everything that He has created, and there is nothing that He has not created.

> He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. (Psalm 72:8)

> The burden of the word of the Lord in the land of Hadrach, and Damascus shall be the rest thereof: when the eyes of man, as of all the tribes of Israel, shall be toward the Lord. And Hamath also shall border thereby; Tyrus, and Zidon, though it be very wise. And Tyrus did build herself a strong hold, and heaped up silver as the dust, and fine gold as the mire of the streets. Behold, the Lord will cast her out, and he will smite her power in the sea; and she shall be devoured with fire. Ashkelon shall see it, and fear; Gaza also shall see it, and be very sorrowful, and Ekron; for her expectation shall be ashamed; and the king shall perish from Gaza, and Ashkelon shall not be inhabited. And a bastard shall dwell in Ashdod, and I will cut off the pride of the Philistines. And I will take away his blood out of his mouth, and his abominations from between his teeth: but he that remaineth, even he, shall be for our God, and he shall be as a governor in Judah, and Ekron as a Jebusite. And I will encamp about mine house because of the army, because of him that passeth by, and because of him that returneth: and no oppressor shall pass through them any more: for now have I seen with

> mine eyes. Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: and his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth. (Zechariah 9:1-10)

As you can see and hear, He does have dominion over our bodies. But at the same time, He does sell us to certain kings at certain times to have dominion over us. I told you all in the last book or precept, that I think Saul had dominion over me for the first 40 years of my life. I think this because Saul visited a woman with a familiar spirit in which she could raise or talk to the dead, which is forbidden by our Father. I did this once, my first time driving to California when I was in my mid-twenties. But then when I was called to the Bible and heard and believed what I heard, I am not sure if it was Moses that had dominion over me, or one of the other kings that reigned over Israel that found the book of the law.

> Josiah was eight years old when he began to reign, and he reigned thirty and one years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Jedidah, the daughter of Adaiah of Boscath. And he did that which was right in the sight of the Lord, and walked in all the way of David his father, and turned not aside to the right hand or to the left. And it came to pass in the eighteenth year of king Josiah, that the king sent Shaphan the son of Azaliah, the son of Meshullam, the scribe, to the house of the Lord, saying, Go up to Hilkiah the high priest, that he may sum the silver which is brought into the house of the Lord, which the keepers of the door have gathered of the people: And let them

deliver it into the hand of the doers of the work, that have the oversight of the house of the Lord: and let them give it to the doers of the work which is in the house of the Lord, to repair the breaches of the house, Unto carpenters, and builders, and masons, and to buy timber and hewn stone to repair the house. Howbeit there was no reckoning made with them of the money that was delivered into their hand, because they dealt faithfully. And Hilkiah the high priest said unto Shaphan the scribe, I have found the book of the law in the house of the Lord. And Hilkiah gave the book to Shaphan, and he read it. And Shaphan the scribe came to the king, and brought the king word again, and said, Thy servants have gathered the money that was found in the house, and have delivered it into the hand of them that do the work, that have the oversight of the house of the Lord. And Shaphan the scribe shewed the king, saying, Hilkiah the priest hath delivered me a book. And Shaphan read it before the king. And it came to pass, when the king had heard the words of the book of the law, that he rent his clothes. (2 Kings 22:1-11)

Now it came to pass in the third year of Hoshea son of Elah king of Israel, that Hezekiah the son of Ahaz king of Judah began to reign. Twenty and five years old was he when he began to reign; and he reigned twenty and nine years in Jerusalem. His mother's name also was Abi, the daughter of Zachariah. And he did that which was right in the sight of the Lord, according to all that David his father did. He removed the high places, and brake the images, and cut down the groves, and brake in pieces the brasen serpent that Moses had made: for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it: and he called

> it Nehushtan. He trusted in the Lord God of Israel; so that after him was none like him among all the kings of Judah, nor any that were before him. For he clave to the Lord, and departed not from following him, but kept his commandments, which the Lord commanded Moses. And the Lord was with him; and he prospered whithersoever he went forth: and he rebelled against the king of Assyria, and served him not. (2 Kings 18:1-7)

Now there are other kings in which found the book of the law, or did right for a while, but I am just showing you this because the very first time I read the King James Bible, I stopped eating the unclean, I stopped celebrating man-made holidays and birthdays. Not because I was trying to impress anyone, but because I believed what I read or heard. That also includes believing what I didn't hear or read. Then after I walked out into the wilderness to die on March 8th, 2016, that is when the Father took full and complete dominion over my body.

Now I figure that there are some that are thinking why didn't it happen this way for them. Well, first and foremost, God the Father will choose whom He will choose, and will have mercy on whom He will have mercy.

> And the Lord said unto Moses, I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken: for thou hast found grace in my sight, and I know thee by name. And he said, I beseech thee, shew me thy glory. And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy. (Exodus 33::17-19)

> For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. So then it is not of him that

> willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth. (Romans 9:15-18)

This is when we realize it is Him that has dominion to give us over to certain kings.

> And testifiedst against them, that thou mightest bring them again unto thy law: yet they dealt proudly, and hearkened not unto thy commandments, but sinned against thy judgments, (which if a man do, he shall live in them;) and withdrew the shoulder, and hardened their neck, and would not hear. Yet many years didst thou forbear them, and testifiedst against them by thy spirit in thy prophets: yet would they not give ear: therefore gavest thou them into the hand of the people of the lands. Nevertheless for thy great mercies' sake thou didst not utterly consume them, nor forsake them; for thou art a gracious and merciful God. Now therefore, our God, the great, the mighty, and the terrible God, who keepest covenant and mercy, let not all the trouble seem little before thee, that hath come upon us, on our kings, on our princes, and on our priests, and on our prophets, and on our fathers, and on all thy people, since the time of the kings of Assyria unto this day. Howbeit thou art just in all that is brought upon us; for thou hast done right, but we have done wickedly: Neither have our kings, our princes, our priests, nor our fathers, kept thy law, nor hearkened unto thy commandments and thy testimonies, wherewith thou didst testify against

> them. For they have not served thee in their kingdom, and in thy great goodness that thou gavest them, and in the large and fat land which thou gavest before them, neither turned they from their wicked works. Behold, we are servants this day, and for the land that thou gavest unto our fathers to eat the fruit thereof and the good thereof, behold, we are servants in it: And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress. And because of all this we make a sure covenant, and write it; and our princes, Levites, and priests, seal unto it. (Nehemiah 9:29-38)

If you are thinking that it is not fair or something that He might do something like this, then you need to realize that it is your own doing.

> Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into thee the uncircumcised and the unclean. Shake thyself from the dust; arise, and sit down, O Jerusalem: loose thyself from the bands of thy neck, O captive daughter of Zion. For thus saith the Lord, Ye have sold yourselves for nought; and ye shall be redeemed without money. (Isaiah 52:1-3)

Because He is all knowing, He knew since the foundation of the world how all of us would be. And He knew who would obey or not. He knew and knows who will read these books. He already knows who will be the dead in Christ in which will rise next. But we do not. He has even given some over to Satan so that the spirit within the person is saved.

> It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. (1 Corinthians 5:1-5)

And at the same time, it is His dominion that caused these holy men to write what they wrote. It was this same dominion that caused Mary to do what she did. It was this same dominion that caused me to do what I did while I was there. Now we are right back where we left off.

Then He goes on to tell me to think about how things got between Mary and me after getting back from the Philippines. Oh boy, that was a very hard time for me Father. I couldn't understand why she turned on me. And in the same respect, I am sure she didn't quite understand why I walked away from the dinner table at the restaurant. I am sure she didn't understand me messing up and telling the company she used to work for that we had met in person.

Then He reminds me of the times that I have been married by man's definition of a marriage and when we went through the divorces. And how things got during that time. And then He goes on to ask me if I could see how this was going on between Mary and me. Oh boy, yes Father, I can see that, is my reply. And my continued reply is, so in other words Father, you are saying this was a time like I gave her a bill of divorcement. But then I started to think about it and realized

that we started getting along better than we ever have. I then realized that the divorce never became final, just as I put in the first book.

This is when I realized that I am not just learning the Bible by just the things I suffer. I am actually living out the lessons. It never dawned on me before as it did just then. I started to think about Isaiah 53 again and realized what it truly means when we are told it pleased God to bruise him, that him being me. This bruising isn't all that bad, but sure as all get out, took me by complete surprise. When we wrote the first book, I even stated that we are getting ready to learn all of this. Never in a million years did I think that He would marry me to the woman of my dreams. Even though it is a platonic marriage, I am happier than I have ever been.

This lesson has taken me through every emotion a human being can feel towards another, and I am glad that it did. Mary and I are closer now than we have ever been. We are sharing things with one another that truly are making me feel more relaxed with life. Just the other day she sent me a short video towards the end of her day. Which happened to be the beginning of my day. When I watched this video, she did and said things which almost made me feel like I just woke up with her beside me. And in return, she has also been sending me videos showing that she is feeling the same way about me.

Okay, I need to add something to this chapter. I was watching a television show after working on the book last night, when I heard something that caught my attention. During this show, they said that a type of person is a philistine. This caught my attention because as I am always listening to the bible, I hear the scriptures referring to the Philistines.

So obviously, I shut the tv off and started to do a little research because I have always been under the impression that the philistines was a certain nationality or something like that. So, I am going to show you all what I found. First, let us look up the definition of philistine on e-Sword, an online bible concordance.

> H6430 pelishtîy pel-ish-tee' Patrial from H6429; a Pelishtite or inhabitant of Pelesheth: - Philistine.

Now let us look up what it means when we just do a quick google search,

> Philistine is a term used to describe a person who is lacking in or hostile or smugly indifferent to cultural values, intellectual pursuits, aesthetic refinement, etc. The term was adapted from the German word Philister by the British poet and cultural critic Matthew Arnold to denote anti-intellectualism. Philistinism describes the attitudes, habits, and characteristics of such a person. Wikipedia +3

I think it is safe to say that many philistines walk the earth today. Seems to me that a philistine is just a person lacking in certain beliefs, cultural beliefs, or maybe lacking a intellectual mindset as others. I would feel safe saying that if you believe some guy came here in the past, changed my perfect Father, and you still expect to obtain His perfection, that you are a philistine.

Now I want to mention how we are told that I only appear once in the end of the world.

> For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

As we have shown you all, everybody makes up the One Son of God, that is how Jesus suffers from the foundation of the world. And now we can understand how I only appear once in the end of the world. I couldn't have been here in the past now that we can know that King James Bible is not a history book. But our all-knowing, loving, merciful, forgiving, longsuffering, patient, and perfect Father told the world what it will be like when I appear in the end of the world, and that time is now.

COMMITTING ADULTERY

I thought we were going to do the conclusion after the last chapter because of it being so long. But while I was driving this evening, I was told something that totally took me by surprise. After conversing with the Father about it for a while, I thought that I would just add it to the last chapter but then realized that I am already adding one chapter to this book, so why not just add another before redoing the conclusion. And as you will see and hear, we are going to cover a very important topic in this chapter.

As I was driving and listening to the Bible this evening, our Father said something to me that completely surprised me. At this particular time, I had gotten to the 17th chapter in the book of John. When all the sudden I heard, "you know you committed adultery on Mary". My immediate responses, what, I haven't even had sex with her. Then He reminds me of all the things that I said a husband does for his wife, and vice-versa. Then He reminds me that none of that involved sex at all. I am like okay, yea I have even told readers that they commit adultery on you just by not getting to know you and by serving other gods. And as we have already pointed out Father, you haven't had sex with anyone.

Then He tells me to think about a message I got from Mary about a week and a half ago. Yes, this is after I started telling her that we are married. And in this message, she said that I have pretty much been a husbandman for her since about our third phone conversation. That is when all the promoting of the books started, and she was making commission off of the sales. She told me that I had been providing for and taking care of her and her daughter since then. And I tell the

Father, I guess I can say that I pretty much took her as my wife the first time we spoke on the phone because I fell in love with her voice.

So, I started thinking about what the Father and I had just spoken about and started wondering if she had committed adultery on me when I was over there, and she kept cutting me off and telling me I had to do things differently. And it took about a full day for me to understand that she did not commit adultery on me. But she did deny me. She was not allowing me to be me or Jesus. But now listen to this.

> Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us: If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself. (2 Timothy 2:10-13)

As we just posted that, please keep it in mind as you read through the rest of this. I want to focus on when we hear if we deny Jesus, he will deny us. This is because this too is part of the lesson. Right before I made the trip to the Philippines, I found out about Mary and her boyfriend/husband. Let me interject on that. I am not sure if they are sleeping together or not. She never told me that they were, so I just assumed with the way things went down, that they were a couple. But since I have been back, through some of our conversations, she has let me know that they are not that close. So, I think maybe she just had a good friend to stay close to her because it was the first time we met, and by all means, she needed to feel safe meeting me for the first time. I mean the entire time I was there; I never saw them kiss, hold hands, or anything that a couple does.

This is where I need to comment on what we just wrote. I have shown you all that I am sitting on the right side of God the Father. I have shown you all that I do nothing on my own. I have shown you all that the Father and I are one. I have shown you all that the Father and

I have conversations all the time. I have shown you all that the Father speaks to me with my own voice. When you all just read, "Let me interject", that was the Father interjecting my way of thinking. David, or Jesus, allowed his imagination to tell him that they were a couple. And once David allowed this, David made it a fact in his mind. Yes, I am getting a lot better at distinguishing between the Father speaking, or just David. And yes, it was the Father interjecting to tell me that they are not a couple and that I am not breaking a marriage up.

Now with how the world has been thinking of how the bible is a history book, we can know that many people have made it fact. Just try to think about how hard it will be for most to come to the realization that it is not a history book, but rather a book on our very own lives.

But when I got there, I thought they were a couple. This had already had me on alert because I couldn't figure out why she didn't tell me about him with all the conversations we had. Then when I got there, it seemed like every time I tried to teach, she would cut me off and tell me I had to do everything differently. Unbeknownst to both of us, she was doing exactly what she was supposed to be doing. It was the Father inside of her causing her to do what she was doing so that when it came time to put it in the book, I could truly write about something I had experienced.

But because I allowed my imagination to cause me to believe that they were a couple. I made it a fact in my mind that they were and with all that I know about the scriptures, I convinced myself that I was misunderstanding what I was being told. Then when I got there and things went the way they did, I really started to doubt I was understanding correctly. So, there was about a three-month gap that neither I nor Mary was there for the other.

Now we need to reflect back as to what happened right after I got back. I made the mess up with letting the company that Mary used to work for know that we had met in person. That wound up causing Mary a lot of stress and anguish that she did not deserve. If you remember, I told you all that it took a while before I told her that I messed up. All because I didn't know how to tell her. Because I knew that it would hurt her emotionally. Then after fighting with

the company that she used to work for, I pretty much told them that I will go there to defend Mary and that if they keep bothering her about this, I was going to pull my business from them. Because it was not her mistake, I was the one that wanted to meet the woman I love.

At the same time all of that was going on, I had been talking to other women on social media apps. No, I was not trying to physically hook up with anyone, but I was trying to find that same communication that Mary and I had. I missed it, and I missed her, and no, I couldn't nor will I ever find anyone that makes me feel the way she does, just by listening to her talk. I was just trying to tell myself that I could find someone else that could make me feel like Mary did. Well, that is when I hit the second deer with this truck. No, it didn't do much damage, but it did some. And at about the same time, is when I got the unforeseen $16,000 bill in the mail.

Both of those things we just mentioned were forms of chastisement, and or me being rebuked by the Father. I know the night I hit the second deer, I instantly knew that I was doing something wrong, I instantly quit talking to any other women because I was talking to one just about an hour before I hit the deer. So, I had a pretty good inclination that it was something that I was doing wrong, but I didn't know why it was wrong. Because at this time, in my mind, Mary and I was no longer supposed to be communicating. Imagination sucks and if anyone tells you that you must have a good imagination, cut that person off of the body.

But then there was still the issue of the $16,000 bill that I had to pay. Well, as it turns out, the company that Mary used to work for had threatened to sue her for meeting me. That was part of her stress that she had to deal with because of me slipping up. Yes, that issue got dropped, but it is still a lot of suffering that Mary went through that was unnecessary. Yes, I am positive that the Father had a lot to do with the issue getting dropped. So, I realized that this is why I had to pay this money, I immediately told the Father that I accept my chastisement and or rebuking. And most definitely asked for forgiveness. Remember if we be without chastisement, we then become bastarts.

> If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. (Hebrews 12:7-11)

But this was things that I was working out with the Father. Mary and I were still not talking on good terms. Yes, on the random day that I would receive and email from her, I got excited , but only to find out that she was rejecting me. It bothered me but at the same time, I didn't mind because I have been rejected by so many for so long. At least she was still getting a hold of me, and that alone made me happy.

This went on for a couple of months until the Father had her go get the King James Bible, and then she found the areas I told you all about. And at this time, as I have told you all, my miles were just not that good. I kept telling myself that it must be because of the winter, maybe tax season, or something else. I refused to realize that maybe the Father slowed my miles down because I was not doing as I was supposed to be doing. I mean, I hit the second deer, I had to take the truck to the shop. They were busy and it took eleven days to fix, which should have only taken a day. Then I had to take the truck back in a few weeks because they installed my windshield incorrectly and it leaked when it rained. It just seemed that things were just happening that kept my miles down. As the saying goes for a truck driver, if the wheels aren't turning, you are not making any money. But at the same time, the Father kept telling me that we will get through this.

Now it took me a couple of weeks to realize this, but it was about the same time that Mary and I started getting along again, that my miles went right back to the way I like them. I like to run my 70 hours out in about six and a half days, take a thirty-four-hour restart to reset my clock, and do it again. And that is exactly how things have been working since Mary and I started getting along and talking more on a regular basis. This was before the Father started telling me that Mary and I were married.

Then the Father started to put it on my conscience that Mary and I are married. And over the next week or so, I started telling Mary that the Father is telling me that you and I are married. At this time, I wasn't quite grasping how we were married, but I knew the Father told me that I was married to her. But at the same time, I was starting to feel even better than I was before the trip.

And then He reminded me of how I told Mary that I would pay her hospital bill. How I told Mary that I would see what I could do about getting her a new phone. Then He ask me, did you do what you said you were going to do. Well, you know Father, no is my reply. And as the flesh does, I tried to say I didn't have the money. I wasn't working enough to have the extra money to send. Then He ask me a series of questions, who do you work for, who is your dispatcher, who is your boss, and who does the money you have belong to? You are Father, is my reply. Okay, then you slowed me down Father.

And it hit me, and I didn't have to ask why. I am married to Mary and a marriage is a commitment. A marriage is a covenant. A marriage is a contract. This marriage is not only a commitment, covenant, or contract when things are good, it is through good, bad or otherwise. I stopped helping her. I stopped being there for her in every way and that is why you slowed my miles down Father. Because I stopped helping her as I said I would do, she wound up forming negative feelings towards me and was just trying to find ways to make me feel the same pain she was. That is why she started rejecting me, not because she doesn't believe in me. I am positive that there is a good part of her that does believe in me because for the second year, she did not celebrate her daughter's birthday. I know for a fact because she

emailed me telling me that she was kind of sad not doing anything for her daughter. So, I emailed her back to explain how we make others feel special and loved every day, and not just on certain days. Within just a few hours I received another email with a video of her daughter and her just spending time together. And from my understanding her daughter never complained.

And before the trip over there, we were both there for each other in everything. And if you all recall the first chapter, I told you all how she made me feel. Now that I have confessed to the world of the shameful things I did to my wife, we need to move on. I didn't understand that this was me committing adultery on my wife, but as explained a while ago, it was. No, I haven't had sex with Mary, nor anyone else, but I allowed myself to be closed towards her mentally, emotionally, morally, spiritually, and financially. And at the same time, I was trying to find someone else to talk to that would make me feel at least as half as good as Mary did.

Then the Father tells me to think about how the scriptures teach that the world commits adultery on Him. Then He tells me that you have told the world in the books that they commit adultery on Me, but now I want to show them how they commit adultery. Okay Father, now that I have experienced this, it shouldn't be that hard. So, what we are going to do now is look at three sections of the Bible that we can hear people commit adultery on the Father.

> From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts. Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. (James 4:1-4)

> Oh that my head were waters, and mine eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people! Oh that I had in the wilderness a lodging place of wayfaring men; that I might leave my people, and go from them! for they be all adulterers, an assembly of treacherous men. And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 9:1-3)

> Then said the Lord unto me, Go yet, love a woman beloved of her friend, yet an adulteress, according to the love of the Lord toward the children of Israel, who look to other gods, and love flagons of wine. (Hosea 3:1)

Oh boy, this is going to be fun. Yes, we have to repeat a few things to explain this. I apologize for the way I put these lessons in these books, but most of them come in while I am driving, so I must try to remember the way it came in. And on top of that, when these lessons come in, they don't come in one at a time. And none of these lessons can be explained with just a couple verses of the bible.

Now we have explained how God the Father is the One that actually wrote the King James Bible. We have explained how the Father kicked us out of heaven because we thought we could obtain eternal perfection by doing things differently then His perfect ways. Now we have already went over how God the Father tells us that He is married to us, so I want to show how man is to cleave to his wife so that they can become one flesh.

> And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judaea beyond Jordan; And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

> The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Matthew 19:1-6)

Now let us listen to when we are told to cleave unto God.

> If there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder, And the sign or the wonder come to pass, whereof he spake unto thee, saying, Let us go after other gods, which thou hast not known, and let us serve them; Thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams: for the Lord your God proveth you, to know whether ye love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul. Ye shall walk after the Lord your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him. (Deuteronomy 13:1-4)

That is only one area of many that we are told to cleave to God. We all know how a man can cleave to his wife, but the only way we can cleave to the Father is by learning everything about Him in the Bible He gave us. Do you remember just a while ago we said a marriage is a commitment, covenant, and or contract? What I want to do now is show that a covenant and contract can be considered the same. Let us do a google search so that we can see this.

UpCounsel https://www.upcounsel.com › legal-def-covenant Legal Definition of Covenant: What You Need to Know – UpCounsel A covenant generally refers to any type of promise or contract, whether it is made in writing or orally. In a more technical sense, a covenant is an agreement between two or more persons, entered into in writing and under seal, whereby either party: 1. Stipulates for the truth of certain facts. 2. Promises to perform or … See more

As you can see, I am showing the website that this is on. I do realize that there is some what of a difference because in a contract, both parties must sign. But at the same time, a covenant tends to refer to a contract. But we need to remember that we are looking at this with spiritual eyes, and for that purpose, a contract and covenant are the same thing.

Now that we are realizing that the King James Bible is not a history book, when did He make this covenant with us? That would be the year 1611, the year it was published. Okay, I just freaked myself out a little bit. I decided to check and see what month it was published, and as it turns out, May 02, 1611. That is precisely 400 years before the Father called me to the Bible. I remember because I was listening to Coast2CoastAM towards the beginning of May 2011. They had someone on talking about how Harold Camping was predicting the rapture to happen on May 21 of 2011. I mean I knew it was 400 years, but this makes me think it could have very well have been 400 years later to the day when the Father called me to the Bible because as soon as I heard about this concept, I started to search out the truth. And as proven in previous books or precepts, the rapture concept is a false teaching and that was the first thing I seen and heard in 2011.

So, we have had this contract in front of us the entire time. So, I know I am guilty, but how many of us in the world today has signed a contract without reading it? We all know if someone gives us a physical contract to sign, we cannot add to it, take away from it, or alter it in any way. And yes, this contract or covenant that we have had in front of us tells us the same thing, as we have already shown. Once anyone adds to it, or takes away from it, it becomes a non-valid covenant or contract.

Remember how we showed that God the Father created the light on the first day of creation? Do you remember that this was Him breathing life into everyone on the planet. This was the Father putting a little of Himself into each person. Now listen to this.

> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. (John 1:1-5)

We were all darkness before the Father breathed part of Himself into us. This is where God sent His only begotten Son into the world. So, now we jump ahead to the light in the New Testament.

> For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. (John 3:16-21)

This was the Father marrying us, or laying down His own life in the beginning so that we all would have the opportunity to learn of Him and His ways so that we could get back into His perfect house. Yes, the Father has put it in the heart of man so that man could not figure out His works since the foundation of the world.

> He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

But since He gave us His covenant, man has had the opportunity to learn everything about Him and all that He is about. But man as a whole, has listened to their imagination instead of Him and have come up with their own version of the bible. And because our Father has been there for all of us since the beginning, man has committed adultery on the Father by not being there for Him mentally, morally, spiritually, emotionally, and financially. This is why we are told that He loved us first.

> We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John 4:19)

But because we chose to not hearken to His voice, we all got kicked out of the Garden of Eden and was sentenced to death. That is when the Father said that man's days will not be more than 120 years. Now there have been many that have been trying to pay attention to the genealogy and trace the years as to when the this all began. This is where I want to listen to what we are told in the first chapter of Hebrews.

> God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness

> of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high: Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. (Hebrews 1:1-6)

We have shown you all in previous books that we are the ones placed below the angels. This is when the Father gave His only begotten Son, which is everybody on the planet. So, when they look down from above, they see all of us as the One begotten Son of the Father. The only reason I am who I am is because I am the servant David that He speaks of in Psalm 89. And as we are told in Matthew 6. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. And now I give you all an understanding of the Father.

Now I want to talk about something else that the Father brought to my attention about a week ago or so. I was listening to the Bible as I was driving and I heard something that I never did quite understand until I heard it that night. We are going to be showing how the scriptures teach that men's eyes are full of adultery. Yes, I had heard this countless times, and have always thought it had something to do with how we men look at women. I was completely wrong. Now let us listen to what I am referring to.

> But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their

pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling

> unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: (2 Peter 2:1-14)

In order to explain the way the Father had me experience this, I must explain some things. The last time my truck was in the shop was just before, or at the same time Mary and I started getting along again. This was before I started to understand that I am married to her. Definitely before I understood that I was committing adultery on her. In fact, Mary and I were on the phone just a while ago talking about this. But at this time, I had it in my mind to start to put all kinds of lights on my truck.

I told you all about the decals I had installed on it earlier in this book. But this is something that I had been thinking about for a few months. So, the day I got my truck out of the shop, I told Bill in the body shop of what I wanted. He drew a sketch and so forth so that he could get it correctly. And the work I wanted to have done I figured to be close to another $5000. I told Bill to give me a call once he got an estimate figured out and I would bring the truck back in to get it done. I was told to give him a few days before I would hear from him.

And as I always do, as soon as I left, I told the Father if it is your will, then Bill will be calling me within a week. Needless to say, I never heard back from Bill. So, at first I just figured the Father didn't want me to put all these lights on the truck. To me, they go along with the theme of the truck. In the meantime, Mary and I started getting along really well again. But at the same time, I was getting tired of helping my daughter out financially. I won't give amounts, but it just seemed like I was paying for everything. And with me now getting back on track with my wife, I was starting to feel some pressure. Then I thought maybe this is why the Father didn't want me to get the lights on the truck.

Then as I am listening to the Bible as I do, I got to this chapter talking about how many have eyes full of adultery and it just hit me like a ton of bricks. I started thinking about what the scriptures teach and how we are to labor to help others. How we are to think more about the things of others rather than the things of our own.

I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive. (Acts 20:35)

If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be likeminded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind. Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. (Philippians 2:1-4)

Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man

severally as he will. For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked. That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it
. (1 Corinthians 12:1-26)

Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth. (1 Corinthians 10:24)

> We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. (Romans 15:1)

> My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. (James 2:1-9)

I could post several other areas that relate to this topic but I think you can see and hear that everything we do is about the love for others more than the love of ourselves. Remember the two greatest commandments.

> Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou

> shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

Beings how the Father is the One that actually wrote the King James Bible and He clearly is constantly telling us to think and do more for others than ourselves, when we only look and see ways to better ourselves, our eyes are full of adultery. So, when I had the intentions of spending all that money on the lights for the truck and started to feel bitter towards helping others or better said, I was allowing my eyes to be full of adultery because this was me looking at doing the exact opposite of what the Father has taught me. How can I be loyal to Him if I start looking after things of my own, when I know that He has been only loyal towards me and all since the beginning?

Now we are going to kind of switch gears a little bit, but I still feel that it goes along the same logic. What I want to talk about is where the scriptures teach that we are to be married to him that is risen from the dead. Yes, I am the first to be raised from the dead. I am also the firstborn, but up until the Father taught me all about this marriage with Him and now to Mary, I would wonder how in the world can I be married to all. Let us listen to where we are told this.

> Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. (Romans 7:4)

I guess this is something that I have known for years but it just never clicked. We are told to cleave unto the Father.

> Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you, for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the Lord God of your fathers giveth you.

Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. Your eyes have seen what the Lord did because of Baalpeor: for all the men that followed Baalpeor, the Lord thy God hath destroyed them from among you. But ye that did cleave unto the Lord your God are alive every one of you this day. (Deuteronomy 4:1-4)

Ye shall walk after the Lord your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him. (Deuteronomy 13:4)

Then Joshua called the Reubenites, and the Gadites, and the half tribe of Manasseh, And said unto them, Ye have kept all that Moses the servant of the Lord commanded you, and have obeyed my voice in all that I commanded you: Ye have not left your brethren these many days unto this day, but have kept the charge of the commandment of the Lord your God. And now the Lord your God hath given rest unto your brethren, as he promised them: therefore now return ye, and get you unto your tents, and unto the land of your possession, which Moses the servant of the Lord gave you on the other side Jordan. But take diligent heed to do the commandment and the law, which Moses the servant of the Lord charged you, to love the Lord your God, and to walk in all his ways, and to keep his commandments, and to cleave unto him, and to serve him with all your heart and with all your soul. (Joshua 22:1-5)

> And it came to pass a long time after that the Lord had given rest unto Israel from all their enemies round about, that Joshua waxed old and stricken in age. And Joshua called for all Israel, and for their elders, and for their heads, and for their judges, and for their officers, and said unto them, I am old and stricken in age: And ye have seen all that the Lord your God hath done unto all these nations because of you; for the Lord your God is he that hath fought for you. Behold, I have divided unto you by lot these nations that remain, to be an inheritance for your tribes, from Jordan, with all the nations that I have cut off, even unto the great sea westward. And the Lord your God, he shall expel them from before you, and drive them from out of your sight; and ye shall possess their land, as the Lord your God hath promised unto you. Be ye therefore very courageous to keep and to do all that is written in the book of the law of Moses, that ye turn not aside therefrom to the right hand or to the left; That ye come not among these nations, these that remain among you; neither make mention of the name of their gods, nor cause to swear by them, neither serve them, nor bow yourselves unto them: But cleave unto the Lord your God, as ye have done unto this day. (Joshua 23:1-8)

How does one cleave unto the Father if He is not physically here as a man and woman are to cleave unto one another to become one flesh?

> And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:23-24)

> And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Matthew 19:5-6)

What I mean by I have known this for years is because this is exactly what I have done. When the Father first called me to the Bible in 2011, I actually read the first complete book of my life. Then I read it again. Then I spent the next five years or so trying to be obedient to all that Moses said. Then once I laid down my life in 2016, I have and do nothing but listen to the Bible. I have cleaved unto Him with everything. I refused and still refuse to seek Him anywhere else than the King James Bible. I devoted every second of every minute of every hour of every day of every week of every month of every year since then to Him. I have and do devote anything and everything to Him and only Him. He comes first and foremost in all the things that I do regardless of how it makes others feel. That is how I have become One with Him.

Now that the end of the world is approaching and the world does not have the time to read and listen to all the Father has been saying in the King James Bible to get the understanding that I have, the world needs to devote everything to reading and or listening to the books that the Father has had me write. That is how you all can be married to him that is raised from the dead. Or better said, this is how you all can be married to me, the first to be risen from the dead.

THE GREAT BURNING

We are doing this chapter because I had something happen to me about a couple months ago or so that when I was listening to the Bible, I instantly recalled talking about this in the first book, and how it related to what was happening to me at the very moment. But then I started thinking about how we are in hell now, and it dawned on me that I should do a chapter on this.

As I was listening to the Bible, it got to a chapter in Deuteronomy that has always caught my attention. The chapter I am referring to is the chapter that talks about how God will give your children to others. This caught my attention the very first time I read the Bible because it was right then and there, that I started to think the Bible was talking about my life. Because this was the very reason that I tried to take my own life back in 2009, as talked about in previous books. This is also the chapter that talks about how God will give us failing eyes. I wear glasses so yes, this also connected with my own life.

Now I have told you all in previous books, or precepts that it was the Father that caused things to happen the way they did when I passed out behind the wheel back in May of 2022. If that incident wouldn't have happened, I would have never left the company that I was working for. Because as explained in previous precepts, that was the company that sent me to the west and turned the trucks up within two weeks of me giving them my notice of quitting. I never told the company why I was quitting, but within two weeks from the time I gave my notice, they sent me to the west coast and turned the trucks up. And after coming back from Israel the first time after quitting them without notice, they called me to come back to work for them

the day I got back. I thought I was supposed to drive for them until the end. That is when He got me to go to work for the company that I am working for now so that everything about me was and is blue and white, just as it is in the sky or the heavens because I am now sitting on His right side in the heavenly places.

I showed you all in the seventh precept how He caused me to become dehydrated even though I was drinking coffee all day, drinking Powerade drinks, and a little lactose free milk. I never felt thirsty but yet I got so dehydrated that it caused a severe pain in my left side of my chest going into my arm. It got so severe that I was having a hard time moving my left arm. I even started to think that maybe I had the same lung cancer my dad did when he was alive as my dad. Then one night He told me to stop at a rest area and workout on the mini stepper I have in the truck and proceeded to tell me that He caused me to get dehydrated and gave me the instructions on how to fix the problem. Then proceeded to tell me that He caused this to happen so that the world can see and hear how easy it is to listen to your imagination, or Satan instead of Him. You may think you are doing everything right, but your ways are far from right.

> There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death. (Proverbs 14:12)
>
> There is a way that seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death. (Proverbs 16:25)
>
> There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness. (Proverbs 30:12)

As I have explained in previous books or precepts, I will not go to a doctor under any circumstances other than for a mandatory biannual DOT physical. I did not go to the doctor when I passed out behind the wheel. I did not go to the doctor when I was having severe chest pains. My doctor is my Father and I listen to my conscience on how

to treat my medical problems, and He never tells me to go and see a doctor in the flesh. If you want to learn more on these topics, then you can read or listen to the other precepts.

But the part that caught my attention this time was where it tells us that He will give us an extreme burning. We are going to place the entire chapter next and then we will be talking about things throughout the chapter. As you read through this, try and see how you can relate any of this to your very own life because the entire Bible is about our lives, not just mine, and definitely not about people from hundreds of years ago.

> And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God. Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. The Lord shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in his ways. And all

people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord; and they shall be afraid of thee. And the Lord shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers to give thee. The Lord shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them. But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. The Lord shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou

goest to possess it. The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. The Lord shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. The Lord will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. The Lord shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: And thou shalt grope at noonday, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine

hand. The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up; and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed alway: So that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. The Lord shall bring thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in; for the locust shall consume it. Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail. Moreover all these curses shall come upon thee, and shall pursue thee, and overtake thee, till thou be destroyed; because thou hearkenedst not unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which he commanded thee: And they shall be upon thee for a sign and for a wonder, and upon thy seed for ever. Because thou servedst not the Lord thy God with joyfulness, and

with gladness of heart, for the abundance of all things; Therefore shalt thou serve thine enemies which the Lord shall send against thee, in hunger, and in thirst, and in nakedness, and in want of all things: and he shall put a yoke of iron upon thy neck, until he have destroyed thee. The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand; A nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor shew favour to the young: And he shall eat the fruit of thy cattle, and the fruit of thy land, until thou be destroyed: which also shall not leave thee either corn, wine, or oil, or the increase of thy kine, or flocks of thy sheep, until he have destroyed thee. And he shall besiege thee in all thy gates, until thy high and fenced walls come down, wherein thou trustedst, throughout all thy land: and he shall besiege thee in all thy gates throughout all thy land, which the Lord thy God hath given thee. And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the Lord thy God hath given thee, in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee: So that the man that is tender among you, and very delicate, his eye shall be evil toward his brother, and toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the remnant of his children which he shall leave: So that he will not give to any of them of the flesh of his children whom he shall eat: because he hath nothing left him in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee in all thy gates. The tender and delicate woman among you, which would not adventure to set the sole of her foot upon the ground for delicateness and tenderness, her eye shall be evil toward the husband of her bosom, and toward

her son, and toward her daughter, And toward her young one that cometh out from between her feet, and toward her children which she shall bear: for she shall eat them for want of all things secretly in the siege and straitness, wherewith thine enemy shall distress thee in thy gates. If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, The Lord Thy God; Then the Lord will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the Lord thy God. And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it. And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone. And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and shalt have none assurance of thy life: In the morning thou shalt say, Would God it were even! and at even

> thou shalt say, Would God it were morning! for the fear of thine heart wherewith thou shalt fear, and for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. And the Lord shall bring thee into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spake unto thee, Thou shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and no man shall buy you. (Deuteronomy 28:1-68)

Before we start to talk about some of the things in this chapter, I feel I need to show you all again, that our Father told us that we must go through a spiritual fire if we are going to get back into the Garden of Eden. Now we all know that we were here on the first day of creation, let us listen to what the lesson teaches us once we got kicked out.

> Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them.And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his

> hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:16-24)

The hottest fire that I feel that we all must go through or deal with is death. Once kicked out of the garden, nobody had eternal life any longer. If it isn't our own death that burns, it is the death of loved ones. That pain we feel from death, is just part of the flaming sword which turns every way to keep the way of the tree of life from us. But this has been explained in previous books or precepts, so I am not going to talk too much about this. I just felt it was necessary to show that we are told that we must go through fire, or better yet, suffer through great burning from the beginning of the bible.

Did you hear the areas that we referred to before posting this chapter. Well, this time I started to get a severe burning in my left foot up by my toes. Mainly my pinky toe and the one next to it. The burning got so harsh that it started to burn all the time. It even hurt when I put my boots on at the beginning of my day. And of course I have learned over my years of life, that this could be a sign of diabetes. And yes, I am a truck driver and do know that most forms of diabetes will disqualify you from driving, so it started to worry me a bit.

And as I have told you all, I will not go to a doctor under any circumstances. So, I started talking to the Father about it quite a bit. Then He told me to start thinking about what I started doing once I got back from the Philippines. And yes, I had to think about it for a while, but I quit exercising, I started to eat a lot of junk food, and when I say a lot of junk food, I mean I started eating king size candy bars on a daily basis. I started eating Cinnabon cinnamon rolls and even some ice cream. I know I started to eat a lot of sugary foods. I guess I could say that I was doing what I was doing before the incident happened in May of 2022.

Not trying to justify what I was doing but I got depressed when I got back and especially when Mary started to persecute me. My heart was broken because I thought I had lost the one only person that believed in me. The one and only person that can talk to me and calm me down and get me to relax just by listening to her talk. I think it was about a week or so before Mary and I started getting along well when I had this conversation with the Father. Needless to say, I stopped eating the junk food, started exercising on a regular basis and it was only a couple days that the burning seemed to lighten up a bit.

Then a couple of weeks later, it started burning really bad again. I started to ask myself if I was not cutting enough sugar out of my diet. Then as I was taking a shower, I looked down at my left foot and noticed a humongous blister between my pinky toe and fourth toe or ring toe. There was bruising all around it. And this is where I felt like a total idiot, a few weeks before this I do remember peeling a little extra skin out from between those two toes. Yes, all my life for some reason, a little extra skin grows between those two toes and occasionally I will pull it. Well, I think I might have gotten a little too much because now I was thinking it was infected. I did some research on google as I do. I seen that this could be caused by high blood sugar or maybe just to much friction between the toes. And once I started exercising again, I started to do some intense full body workouts that cause me to maneuver differently on my feet. I don't know how long the blister had been there, but it couldn't have been long, or at least not that big. Once I popped it and did some doctoring on it, listening to my conscience, that cleared up. I still have a little burning going on, but it is not nearly as severe as it was. So, I am not sure if it was from the friction from working out, or if my blood sugar was too high.

But either way, the Father told me that this was because I was choosing not to be obedient and take care of my wife. Remember the Father kept telling me that He joined us together and no man asunder, that includes me. So yes, He is the one that caused me to eat all the sugary foods and then start doing the extreme workouts. I honestly feel that it was a combination of both that was causing the

severe burning. Now that Mary and I are getting along better than ever, everything in my life is working out beautifully.

Are you all starting to understand the power of our Father. He breathed part of Himself into everyone on this planet and not just me. He has the power to have you do things that are so far from being normal, that He can and will do exactly as He said He would do in this chapter, and many other areas of the scriptures. Remember that you are the temple of God and that He does what He wants in His temple.

So, now we are going to talk about this chapter a bit. First thing I want to bring to your attention is where we are told that if we hearken to all that the Father commands, besides all the blessings, He will make us the head and not the tail. Remember how we have been showing you all that man is the beast spoken of in Revelation? But then comes all the curses that come upon us if we do not hearken to His voice. And yes, this is when people will be made the tail of the beast and not the head.

> And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: (Deuteronomy 28:13)

> Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For wickedness burneth as the fire:

> it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. (Isaiah 9:14-18)

Did you pay attention to all the illnesses that he said He would bring upon us? Do you recall how I was just telling you all about my foot? It is that simple for Him. It doesn't matter what illness you have experienced or experiencing, it is because He is causing it. I am talking about something as simple as a cold, to a life-threatening disease.

> The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. (Deuteronomy 28:22)

He will cause pains in our bones and joints which I know many people experience.

> The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. (Deuteronomy 28:35)

And there is nobody on this planet that has died or will die without Him bringing it upon them. Have you had a hard time keeping a job, staying married, or ever felt that everything that you do goes wrong.

> The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. (Deuteronomy 28:20)

I know that I am not the only one that has had this problem in their lives. Have your children been taken away and raised by others?

> Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand. (Deuteronomy 28:32)

Now I am going to bring one verse up that I hesitated to bring up because of my newfound wife in the Philippines. Once I show what I am referring to we will talk about it.

> Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. (Deuteronomy 28:30)

I hesitated on this because I have not had any physical contact with my wife Mary. And we both have agreed that this marriage is not going to get intimate or physical. I must say this, it might some day down the road, but for now we both are very comfortable with it not and have agreed to cross that bridge if we ever come to it. But when I first read this as I am posting certain things from this chapter, I wondered if this was what the Father is doing with me.

So, I skipped it at first and the next day as I am driving the Father brought something to my memory. My second wife of the flesh gave me chlamydia twice. I did not fool around on her and as the doctor did say when he gave me a prescription to cure it, you can only get this STI from sexual intercourse. So, the only way I got this was by her laying with another man.

This is where I make a world wide confession, well to you all anyway, I have confessed in the flesh and to the Father in the past. And this was many years before the Father called me to the Bible. I messed around on my first wife, so when this happened to me, I just figured it was fair because I fooled around on my first wife. Back then

I called it karma, but now that I am all about the Bible, I truly believe I was being done unto as I did to my first wife.

> Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

Now let us get back to looking at a few things in here that I know people can relate to their very own lives.

> And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the Lord thy God hath given thee, in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee: (Deuteronomy 28:53)

Have you ever felt like anything and everything that your children do, consume all of your time and thoughts? Your thoughts are food in a spiritual realm. So, when your children consume all of your thoughts, you are eating the flesh of your children. I also know that I am not the only one on this planet that wears glasses, contacts, or has had Lasik surgery done.

> And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: (Deuteronomy 28:65)

I am always hearing about how people think they can cure cancer. Or these deadly diseases that people get such as HIV, syphilis, Hepatitis B, or even heart attacks or heart disease. Do you remember our Father tells us that He will cause illnesses upon us that our not listed in this book?

> Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. (Deuteronomy 28:61)

All of these things listed in the chapter in Deuteronomy are all forms of flames that we go through on a daily basis. Anything and everything that a person goes through that makes them feel anything but perfect is some form of burning. We all are going through the great burning in Satan's kingdom or world.

All of these health problems that we endure and many other things that seem to go wrong in our lives are done unto us so that we will turn back to our Father and His perfect ways. At the same time, it could very well be something that we have done unto others in one of our past lives. Everything is so that we can learn to love the same way that our Father loves.

> Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain (1 Corinthians 3:13-20)

Now we are going to look at this from a different angle if you will. To get this angle started, we are going to talk about how I smoke cigarettes. Yes, as I have told you all, the Father had me tell my brother that if I quit smoking to save my life, I will lose it. Then as I told you all, I put them down before I went to the Philippines last November. I did that out of love for others because there was no way that I was going to be bringing smoke around Mary or her daughter with serious asthma problems. And as shown, there is no sin against whatever we do for the love of others. But as soon as I got back, I started smoking again. And I will say it right now, when I go back to the Philippines, I will put them down again, not for me but for Mary and her daughter.

The reason we are talking about this is because of how everybody thinks that smoking causes cancer. Smoking does not cause cancer. If smoking caused cancer then everybody that has ever smoked would have cancer. And there have been people that have lived to be over a hundred years of age but yet smoke all their lives. I did do a google search on this and find many articles pertaining to people that lived beyond a hundred years even though they smoked. But I cannot seem to find one article that lists a few people. I would have to post several results in order to show you all, so I suggest you do your own google search to just see how many people live to over 100 years of age even though they smoke, drank, and eat chocolate on a daily basis.

Before we move on I must tell you all of something that I heard just a while ago as I was driving, knowing that I was going to be talking about smoking and cancer as soon as I got stopped for the night. I was changing CDs of the Bible and when I do this, the radio comes on as soon as I eject the cd from the cd player, until I insert the next one. In this brief moment that the radio was on, there was some guy on saying that people need to stop eating processed food and such because it will cause you to get cancer. How ridiculous this statement alone was. Normally when I am changing CDs, if there is something that catches my interest, I will delay changing the CD. Needless to say, I didn't even hesitate. If this was the case, most of the world would have cancer because processed food is everywhere.

Now back on topic, but at the same time, we are going to be talking about something that will seem to take us away from the topic but it has everything to do with cancer and all the illnesses listed and more. We are going to be talking about how they have dominion over our bodies.

> And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress. (Nehamiah 9:37)

> Like sheep they are laid in the grave; death shall feed on them; and the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their beauty shall consume in the grave from their dwelling. (Psalm 49:14)

> Give the king thy judgments, O God, and thy righteousness unto the king's son. He shall judge thy people with righteousness, and thy poor with judgment. The mountains shall bring peace to the people, and the little hills, by righteousness. He shall judge the poor of the people, he shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor. They shall fear thee as long as the sun and moon endure, throughout all generations. He shall come down like rain upon the mown grass: as showers that water the earth. In his days shall the righteous flourish; and abundance of peace so long as the moon endureth. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth. (Psalm 72:1-8)

> Bless the Lord, all his works in all places of his dominion: bless the Lord, O my soul. (Psalm 103:22)

> Thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and thy dominion endureth throughout all generations. (Psalm 145:13)

As shown in previous books or precepts, the kings in Jerusalem above, have dominion over us. The angels that we are placed a little lower than have dominion over us, and yes, the Father has the ultimate dominion over them and us. Remember thou shall be done in earth as it is in heaven. God gave us dominion over all the animals just as they have dominion over us.

This dominion will get us to go places we normally would not, or get us to do something that we normally would not. And I have noticed a lot, that this dominion will get people to say something that the Father needs me to hear. This dominion is very strong. Let me give you a very good example. I have shown you all that I was in what man calls a car accident on March 28th Good Friday of 1986. I was in a coma for three days and three nights. In other words, next to physically dead. Now listen to this.

> Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38-41)

Now I realize if you are not aware of what I am talking about, you might think that I am just talking about something in my past. But then I have shown you all how I walked out into the wilderness

to die on March 8th, 2016. This was almost 30 years to the day after me spiritually being in the belly of the earth for three days and three nights. In many of the previous books, I have called this the baptism of the Holy Ghost. So, now we need to listen to how old Jesus is when he gets baptized.

> And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased. And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, (Luke 3:22-23)

And we can know that the baptism of the Holy Ghost is different then the baptism of water when we hear Jesus asking if some can undergo the same baptism as him. I will post where we hear about how there is a difference between the baptism of the Holy Ghost and the baptism of water.

> And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? (Mark 10:35-38)

> And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will

> ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. (Matthew 21:23-27)

I know I am getting off track a bit but I cannot help it. The baptism of water is where many have done unto Elias whatsoever people have wanted.

> And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. (Matthew 17:11-12)

Talked about in several of the previous precepts, the Father kicked me out of the man-made church back in 2011 after I got baptized with water, but I had to make a willing choice to undergo public baptism of water before any of my lessons began. So, there is your answer as to whether the baptism of John comes from heaven or men. I had to be baptized by water first. This was Elias restoring me in all things before the Father could do one on one teaching with me.

Now on another point, we just mentioned how I was called to the Bible in 2011. The King James Bible was published in 1611. Through bible studies, man interprets there to be 400 years between the -Old Testament and the New Testament, or 400 years after the Old testament and the time of Jesus. But now that we know that the King James Bible is not a history book, we now realize that there is

400 years from the publication of the King James Bible and the time of Jesus.

Now we need to sit back and think about this for a minute. Do you honestly think that when I had the so-called car accident on March 28th Good Friday 1986, that I planned on being baptized with the Holy Ghost almost 30 years later to the day. I mean it was 20 days shy of 30 years later when I walked out into the wilderness to be baptized with the Holy Ghost. I forgot to show you all what this baptism is.

> And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet? Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me. (Matthew 19:16-21)

I will not explain it all again, but this is exactly what I did. I gave everything I had away to the poor and needy before walking out into the wilderness to be baptized. No, I didn't know that was what I was doing, I thought I was going out there to physically die. This is all explained in previous books or precepts. Now do you think that I deliberately called myself to the bible in 2011, exactly 400 years after the publication of the King James Bible even though I wouldn't even talk to anyone about the bible before then because I knew nothing about it.

That is some pretty powerful dominion, and this dominion is over each and every person on the planet. I have told you all about how I watched the movie Erin Brockovich with Julia Roberts in it. The movie about all the people that lived in a certain area and got cancer from drinking water from that town. This movie is based on a true story, so I asked the Father how that could happen. Well, as it turns out, this dominion caused these people that contaminated the water to do so. Then this dominion kept people from knowing what was going on for years. This dominion even caused some to move into that area so that they would get cancer or other illnesses.

It is the same thing when the Covid-19 was ravishing throughout the world. They say the virus was created in China. Okay maybe, but it was this dominion over the people that created it that caused them to create it. Then it was this dominion over everybody for it to spread like it did. Then it was the dominion over certain people that shut the worlds economy down. If memory serves me right, I think it was first discovered on November 17th of 2019. This was just 13 days after my flight to Maui, Hawaii where I seen how the Father even has dominion over the clouds. That is how I was able to see the flood that covers the earth today, and that floods name is Egypt.

This is where we really need to realize that the law of the Old Testament is only a shadow of things to come.

> For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me: In

> burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure. (Hebrews 10:1-6)

Notice how there is a remembrance of sins with the sacrifice of animals. Notice how the blood of bulls and of goats cannot take away sins. That is because our Father never commanded man to sacrifice animals. Listen to this.

> Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah. To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats. When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts? Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me; the new moons and sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. Your new moons and your appointed feasts my soul hateth: they are a trouble unto me; I am weary to bear them. And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil; Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. (Isaiah 1:10-18)

As explained in previous books, our Father never commanded anyone to sacrifice animals. It has been the imagination of man that

tells them that our Father wanted us to sacrifice animals. I went through this when I almost sacrificed my own son as explained. But it is those that have dominion over our bodies that are making these sacrifices. When they cause things to go wrong in our lives, such as illnesses, cancer, diseases, or any health problem, that is them making a sacrifice. That is why we are told the law is only a shadow of things the come and not the very thing. Let us listen to when we are told there will be the next world.

> Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matthew 12:31-32)

In the next world, all those that adhere to the Fathers ways, will be doing these kinds of sacrifices unto all those that do not adhere to the Fathers ways.

> For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad. (2 Corinthians 5:10)

So, when someone has kidney stones, our Father has caused this because of something that this person has done unto others, either in this life or one of this persons last lives. If someone has cancer, it is the same thing. If someone has any health issues at all, it is because of something this person has done. It can even break down to someone having the flu, going to work anyway and passing on this flu to others so that the flu ridden person does not lose a day or two of pay. Everything we do should always be for the love of others, and going

to work in a multi-person atmosphere with the flu, is unhealthy for others. So, if someone does this unto others, it will be done unto them.

And this takes us to when we are told some will be in charge over a certain number of people.

> And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him, And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance. And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Luke 8:1-8)

> So I took the chief of your tribes, wise men, and known, and made them heads over you, captains over thousands, and captains over hundreds, and captains over fifties, and captains over tens, and officers among your tribes. (Deuteronomy 1:15)

This is the way that is set up for us now. There are kings and such that have dominion over us in sections like this. And the dominion that they have over us, they are supposed to be doing what the Father

commands of them. They are the ones to cause us to do certain things that might make us crash our vehicle, get a speeding ticket, catch a cold or come down with the flu. The list can go on forever, they are the ones that cause us to do anything that might make us feel other than perfect. The Father has designed it this way so that we suffer, then recognize that we are in hell, then seek Him with all of our hearts. And yes, this is how it will work in the next world. And we too, will have certain people under us in the next world. This all depends on how we all do in this world.

Now I want to mention something that I have been hearing a lot over the years. I have spoken with so many people that have told me that they just don't have time to read or listen to the Bible. And to that I will say it is a choice, not a chore. If a person truly wants to learn of the Father, they will make time for Him. Everybody gets so wrapped up in their lives that they think that what He has said in the Bible is irrelevant to what ever they have going on in their lives.

I have spoken with my wife about the time period in which we did not communicate that much. She tells me how she felt like she was hitting walls all the time, metaphorically. She tells me how she was in a bitter mood a lot. And as we both have agreed on, this is because I stopped being there for her mentally, morally, emotionally, spiritually, and financially. I realize that this all had to happen as it did for the lesson, but I still feel like a complete idiot for doing this to her. And yes, I have promised that I will never do this again. And we communicate almost on a daily basis now.

I realize that Mary and I have only been married a couple years, but when our Father breathed life into you, that is when He married you. He has given you the knowledge to do whatever it is you do. He has made time for you, if your reading this, He is making time for you, If you're breathing still, He is making time for you, it is time to make time for Him before the divorce becomes final or the end of the world us upon us.

THE CONCLUSION IS THAT IT IS TEAMWORK

This is the second time that I am doing the conclusion to this book. Beings how the Father told me to add the chapter of The King James Bible is not a history book, and I added a couple more, I figured I needed to redo the conclusion as well.

I am even going to tell you all what I said in the first conclusion. The first conclusion stated that this is my last book, and yes, I still feel the Father is telling me that but, I have said that in so many books that I just think it would be stupid of me to say what the Father has planned for me. I mean now that we know that the King James Bible is not a history book, every lesson that I have been through seems that it could be explained in a better way. So, it is up to Him and not me. But with Him telling me that He did want the chapter of the King James Bible not being a history book and doing another couple chapters in this book after I had already turned in the original manuscript, I do think this is the last one. I do know it will be the last book before I am revealed and once, I am revealed I doubt there will be time to write another.

Now before we get started on showing how this is all teamwork, I want to bring up a couple things that I feel I need to speak about. First is how the miracles that I will be doing will only be done according to each person's belief.

> When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt,

> thou canst make me clean. And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him. The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour. (Matthew 8:1-13)

As shown in the last book or precept, a lot of the things written are getting ready to be fulfilled, so this miracle will be happening with me. But notice how we are told that centurion was told as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. But then again, I do realize that there will be times that I might be doing some sort of miracle to get some to believe. Let us listen to when Jesus raises Lazarus.

Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled. And said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept. Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him! And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. (John 11:32-44)

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying,

Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. Hear ye therefore the parable

of the sower. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a

man took, and sowed in his field: Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof. Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly

> pearls: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old. And it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence. And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works? Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things? And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief. (Matthew 13:1-58)

I placed the entire chapter because it all relates to how there will be people in charge of others and at the same time, it is also talking about us sowing. What we sow in this world is how we will be done unto in the next world. This is not a physical sowing, nor can it really be seen with the eyes. It is a sowing on how we do unto God the

Father and others, or to the One son of God. It is about being there for God the Father and others spiritually, mentally, morally, emotionally, and financially. Remember we all have but one Father which means we all are One big family. And if you refuse to be there for others, you refuse to be there for God the Father.

> When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they

> also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. (Matthew 25:31-46)

Now I am going to post the parable of the talents. I am a little hazy on this, but I feel like the Father is telling me to use the books that we have written for an example. It is talked about in the same chapter of Matthew but before the section we just posted. I didn't want to post the entire chapter like I did before because I have a hard time not talking about everything in the chapter. And a lot of these things have been covered within the previous books or precepts, and I am not wanting to keep repeating myself.

> For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast

> been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 25:14-30)

I do not know why, but as I am listening to the Bible and came across this area, I seen myself leaving books like I do. And to make sense of it, I had to think about it for a few minutes. Let us look at the definition of talents on e-Sword, an online bible concordance.

> G5007 τάλαντον talanton tal'-an-ton Neuter of a presumed derivative of the original form of τλάω tlao4 (to bear; equivalent to G5342); a balance (as

> supporting weights), that is, (by implication) a certain weight (and thence a coin or rather sum of money) or "talent": - talent.

I know this isn't about money because the love of money is the root of all evil.

> For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1 Timothy 6:10)

When I was listening to this part on talents while I was driving, I had a quick vision of me leaving books as I do. I do not have a home or a place to lay my head, so I only take showers at truck stops. When I do this, I leave a book in the shower when I am done. I have been doing this for years.

No, I do not consider myself talented or anything, but I do bring understanding of our Father in these books. And in a roundabout way, this balances out the King James Bible. So, when I leave one of these books, if the person that cleans the shower reads it, and then shares what they start to learn, they are earning more talents. If the person that receives it is not interested in reading the book but decides to place it somewhere someone else can grab it and read it, they are still leaving the possibility for someone else to learn the truth. If the person receiving the book decides to just throw it away, they are taking any chance for anyone to learn from the book. That would be the same as burying it.

I am not speaking of anything that I haven't seen done with the books that I have left behind. Most of the time, I take a shower and then leave. But sometimes I also need to do my laundry after, so I do see what people do with these books. And yes, there has been times that I might come back to the same truck stop at a later date and wind up having a conversation about the book that I left.

The books that I leave behind is just the tip of the ice burg as to how this all concludes to be teamwork. I started to understand this a lot better when the Father first started telling me that we will get through this. I told you all about this in the first chapter. The first thing in teamwork is trust. You need to trust the Father first, not man or what man says about the Father.

> For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15:4)

> All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)

> For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:21)

> For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. (1 John 5:7)

The Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost are one, and the Holy Ghost moved these holy men, then it was actually the Father that wrote the King James Bible. And that is where the trust starts. Remember God the Father is not the author of confusion.

> For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints. (1 Corinthians 14:33)

When a person ventures away from the King James Bible to find out what they can find out about the bible, they confuse themselves. But if one stays with the King James Bible and continues to seek the Father through His Bible, He starts teaching you the simplicity of the

King James Bible. It is not complicated if we just listen to Him and not everything and everyone else. To be part of His team, we need to listen to Him and only Him.

This is where we talk about how the Father and I have been a team since 2011. He is the One that called me to the Bible by having me tune into Coast2Coast Am that night they were talking about the false teaching of the rapture. I then in return decided to start looking into the scriptures. Then I noticed it was talking about my life personally and dove in headfirst. I believed what I read, and chose to listen to all that Moses said. After a few years of doing this, I woke up on my 45th birthday with a gift from above. I wrote the first book with only having a 9th grade education.

Then in 2016, I walked out into the wilderness to die because I heard the engrafted word that told me not to take any food, drink, script, money, or a second coat for my journey. Then after fasting for forty days and nights, I started hard core, one on one, hands on training with the Father. This was me enrolling in school with the Father. During all these years He has been teaching me His ways and not man's. This schooling was to learn about everything that He had me put in the first book.

Then I started writing more books to share with the world what I had learned from the Father. No, I did not get everything correct as I was learning, but I never quit. If I misquoted, or didn't quite understand what I was writing about, I would keep seeking the truth from the Father and His King James Bible. He has had every right to just throw me to the curb, shove me down the sewer drain, and do away with me. But He hasn't because we have been working at this together, as a team.

And now with all of the teamwork that He and I have been through over the years, we bring the world an understanding of Him, what he is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. That is where my part of the teamwork for the world comes in. Through these books that He has had me write, I give the world an understanding of Him and all that He is about. But as stated in all the books we have written; He gets all the glory because I couldn't do any of this without Him.

Now I need to tell you all about something that happened recently that it took a lot of teamwork for me to be able to understand what I was being told, let me explain. I told you all that Mary and I are getting along better than ever. Well because I left the Philippines in such a harsh way, I have been wanting to go and spend some time with my wife on good terms. Especially now that I understand what this is all about. We were talking on the phone one day, and she was talking about some things she wanted to do around the new house. This was about a week after I told her that I was thinking of coming there towards the end of May. As we were talking, she mentioned that she might want to put a few things off because she knows that it will take a while for me to get caught back up after taking a couple of weeks off. She was suggesting without saying it outright that she would rather that I stay here and work. And rightfully so, I truly believe this is the role of a wife. She encourages her husband to continue to work when possible. And I know there is a good part of me that just wanted to go back over because that is the time when the typhoon season starts, and I am kind of anxious to fulfill the scriptures.

But that didn't bother me that much. It was a little later that same day that there was three other people that contacted me that pretty much made me feel that they wanted nothing to do with me, but wanted my money. And no, I am not talking about bill collections, I am talking about friends and family. One of these people did call me to tell me that the money I have credited in their account could only be used to promote my books and not what I wanted to use it for. Towards the end of the day, I had already slipped into one of the darkest times since all this started. And this was the only time I truly felt that everybody was telling me that I couldn't do what I wanted to do with my money. Yes, it is the Father's money, but I was getting so mad that I wasn't thinking about that.

It wasn't until the next day towards the evening, when the Father reminded me of the company that Mary is freelancing with now that offers doing a television interview. This is where I make a confession, I am a published author and have been contacted by so many people asking me if I can give them money so that one of the books might

be able to be made into a movie or something, that I just don't give it any more thought. I know that these companies are more interested in making money than getting the books made into a movie. If someone truly wants to make my books into a movie, they will not ask me for money. I have even had people call me telling me that Netflix wanted to make a book into a documentary but wanted me to pay them to do so.

So, needless to say, when Mary first contacted me about this, I didn't give it much thought, even though what they were selling seemed to be very attractive. And I must admit, Mary told me that she hesitated bringing this up to me because it is going to be me interviewing with a professional pastor. She hesitated because of how well I know the scriptures. She figured that the pastor and I would argue on television. I thought I would do it but I wasn't worried about the timeline. I mean, I have been offered so many things and have been rejected for so long that I have kind of figured that there is no rush.

But when the Father reminded me of this, I started thinking back to when I first started to slip into this dark time that I was now in, and I remembered how as soon as it started, the Father told me "it won't be much longer now David"". Now I started to calm down in a big way. I settled and humbled myself so that I could hear that calm, still voice. And He said "I need this interview to be done". And that is when it hit me like a ton of bricks, "oh my gosh" this is how you are going to reveal me, Father.

As soon as the Father told me this, I didn't waste anytime getting ahold of my wife to let her know that we need to set up this interview. That very night the Father did some things that made me feel that I needed to act on this in a urgent way. It only took a couple of days before I paid for a half hour interview. And the very next morning, the Father and I were speaking, and He started telling me, David, you are going to need more than a half hour interview. Okay, I guess I should tell you this. It cost so much money for a 15-minute interview and so much for a 30-minute interview. But Mary never mentioned anything about an hour-long interview. So, now I had to get a hold of

Mary to find out if we could do an hour-long interview or maybe two back-to-back interviews. And yes, we are going to do two 30-minute interviews back-to-back and they will be uploaded at the same time.

Needless to say, this is going to cost a little chunk of money. So, the day that everything or everybody made me feel like I did, had to happen that way to get me to pay attention to this new company that Mary is working with. That took a lot of teamwork. He had to use several people to get me to understand that this is how He is going to reveal me. Nobody that I had talked to that day that made me feel the way I did had no idea about the interview, except Mary but it had been a few weeks since she mentioned it to me. And now that I know that we can do the two interviews back-to-back, I will be paying the other half very soon. But if I would have continued to plan my trip and then go to the Philippines, I would not be able to do this interview until sometime after I got back. And that is too long.

I must tell you all of another conversation that the Father and I had that also took teamwork. Do you all recall where the Father asked me what I thought about Mary quitting her job and all? Well, it was sometime during Him getting me to understand that He wanted me to do this TV interview, that He also asked me if I remember the doubts I had as to why Mary had quit her job. And as you all are aware of by now, this was last year. Yes, I do remember what I told Him. Then He goes on to tell me that He caused her to quit her job. Then He proceeds to tell me that if she wouldn't have quit her job, she wouldn't have started her own business of freelancing. If she hadn't started freelancing with authors and trying to get them to promote their books with this new company she is working through, I couldn't do this television interview. The promotion company she used to work for offered nothing to do with any television promotions. Anything and everything that happens, happens for a reason and it will always work out for the better if we just trust the mastermind behind it all.

> And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. (Romans 8:28)

What we have been talking about so far is basic teamwork. Now we are going to be talking about how everything that we see or do has taken on teamwork. This team is not a small team, you will be able to see that everybody in the world is part of the team. We have kind of talked about this teamwork in the chapters going through life with one another, with God the Father, with Jesus, and of course we have talked about it in previous precepts showing that everybody is part of the One Son of God so we are not going to get to far into details here.

The first thing I want to say is something that is very common. There is no I in team, and that is a fact. I don't care who you are, what you have done, or what you are doing, it was not done by yourself. The Father had to give you life in the first place, then you had to learn how to craw, walk, and talk. You didn't do any of this on your own, it took teamwork for you to learn just the basics in life. Then it took teamwork to get you to your level of knowledge. It has taken teamwork for everything in your life whether you realize it or not.

I think it was about the same time when the Father first told me we will get through this when my miles started to slow down, as I think I told you all about in the first chapter. Everyday when I would start driving, I would say out loud, it is teamwork Father. Meaning everything that happens to me while I am driving, is teamwork. When I tell this to the Father at the beginning of my shift, I am telling Him that I realize that you are the mastermind in everything that happens, and it is up to me to pay attention to what He is telling me to do as I am driving. And If I don't pay attention to what He is telling me, that is when things go wrong.

As I told you all in the chapter, Hearing the Father's voice in the 6th precept, I hear Him telling me the speed limit when I see a speed limit sign. I hear Him saying the traffic will be heavy today when I am first starting, but a lot of vehicles keep me from getting the truck rolling. I hear Him saying the car in front of me is stopping, changing lanes, or turning when I see a fellow servant and or vessel of God use their brake lights or turn signals. I told you how He tells me when I need to pay close attention because traffic will be coming to a stop soon while I am on the interstate. It takes teamwork for Him to work

through all of these other people just so I can know what He is telling me. And yes, through all these years of schooling, it took teamwork for Him to be able to teach me how to be able to hear His voice. Just as it takes teamwork for any and all when they first start going to school to learn what the teacher is teaching. There is a certain line of communication between the teacher and the student.

Now when I am driving, I realize that it took teamwork for the manufacturer of my truck to build my truck. If I want to continue driving this truck, my part of the teamwork is to do the proper maintenance on the truck. At the same time, it is teamwork for the government to allow me to drive this truck. They set the rules and regulations, and if I want to drive on the roads, I need to meet and keep these rules and regulations. If I do not, they will take me and my truck off the road. Not because they are being mean, but because they want only those that are willing to keep the rules and regulations on the road. It is a matter of safety for all, which is only coming from the Father because He is watching over each and every one of us.

Then we need to realize that it took and takes teamwork for the states or countries to keep the roads maintained so that we can use them. And it is most definitely my part of the teamwork to obey the reduced speed zones and use extra caution when I am driving in a work zone.

I just stepped away from the computer for a minute to think about how I was going to continue on with this chapter and the Father just brought something to my attention. I am going about explaining this the wrong way. We need to think about how this world looked when it first began. We have shown how we were all here on the first day of creation, so we do not need to show that again. But now think about this, let us think of a couple billion of us all being sent here after we were cast out of heaven. There would be no houses, buildings, roads, vehicles, planes, trains, or even a bathroom to use when needed. It would have been like a couple billion people standing around in an empty field, that field being the earth.

It took teamwork for the Father to teach people how to work with stone, wood, metal, steel, plastic, etc. Then it took teamwork for

these people to learn how to build anything. I mean we are not born knowing how to build a house, car or truck, roads, buildings, stores, gas stations, planes, trains, etc. It took a certain number of people to teach people this, and it takes a certain amount of people for them to be able to be able to do what they do.

Just try to picture yourself in this world a few thousand years ago, what would you have, what would you do, and where would you do whatever you might do? It took a team of billions just for you to be able to read this one book. I would be willing to bet that everything you own has taken a team of billions just for you to have any one thing you own. Okay, let's think about this for a minute. I am going to use just one simple item that I own for an example. I am going to use something as simple as my planner I use to keep track of how many miles I drive every week. This is nothing more than a glorified notebook if you really think about it. But I am very thankful to have it. I can simply write down each load I pull during the week, and I know a week in advance of the approximate size of my next check.

I wont mention the name of the manufacturer of my planner, but I will say it was manufactured here in the United States. But I will guarantee that it took a team from all over the world just so that I could have this one planner. First, the plant that made it had to be built. It took a team of engineers and such to be able to come up with a plan to build the print shop or whatever you call the place they make these planners. Skipping all the teamwork that it took for the people to be able to build this building, let us just think about what comes after the building was built. It takes a certain number of people to be able to set up all the machinery in this building, and then to be able to run this machinery. Nowadays a lot of machinery is run by computers, so this causes us to know that there is a lot of components in these computers that come from other countries.

Then these products in these computers had to be shipped here by plane or ship. I will guarantee that these planes or ships have components in them manufactured in different countries. Now let us think about the people that work in this plant that made this planner. They all have houses that they dwell in. Most if not all, had to use

some form of transportation to get to work. And we all know that all of these people must eat on a daily basis. I don't even dare to venture a guess to how many things in these people's houses have things made from other countries. But I will guarantee that it took tools that had parts from other countries in them to build their homes. Then the people that built their homes probably use some things that were made in other countries in order to build their homes. Then the vehicles they drove had components in them that were made in other countries.

Now I realize that there are a lot of people in the United States that will only buy American made products. Let me use Chevy, Ford, or Dodge for an example. Just because it is manufactured in America, it does not mean that all the components in it are from America as well. Don't take my word for it, let us do a quick google search.

> AI Overview
>
> Learn more
>
> While most parts for American-made cars and trucks are manufactured in the USA and Mexico, a significant portion comes from other countries, including China, Japan, Germany, and Italy. The specific percentage of foreign-made parts varies greatly depending on the car model and manufacturer, with some cars having a higher proportion of imported components than others.
>
> Detailed Breakdown:
>
> Mexico: Mexico is a major supplier of auto parts to the US, with some models having a large percentage of Mexican-made parts.
>
> Canada: Canada is another significant supplier, particularly for US automakers.

China: China contributes a small percentage of parts, especially for certain components.

Other Countries: Parts may also be sourced from Japan, Germany, Italy, Turkey, and Taiwan.

Global Supply Chains: The automotive industry is increasingly characterized by global supply chains, making it difficult to determine the precise origin of all parts within a vehicle.

Examples:

Some American-made cars, like those assembled in Canada, have a substantial amount of parts made in Mexico or Canada.

Certain models may have a higher percentage of foreign-made parts, such as the Tesla Model Y.

The "Made in America" label on a car doesn't necessarily mean all its parts are made in the US.

In conclusion, while the US and Mexico are major suppliers of car parts, a considerable portion of components for American-made cars are manufactured in other countries, contributing to the complex global nature of the automotive industry.

As you can see, the vehicles that the people that work in this print shop use some type of foreign parts in their form of transportation, just to get to work. Then they use the machinery to make this one planner. Now this planner had to be shipped to the Walmart that I bought it from. Do we need to think about all the people that it took to build this one Walmart? And all their homes, vehicles, and tools that had things from other countries in them? Do we need to think

about all the people it takes to fill the shelves at this one Walmart or even build and install the shelving for that matter.

Let us just think about the teamwork it took to build the truck, or trucks that it took to ship this planner there. Then how the trucks needed roads to drive on. Then how the trucks needed to put fuel on their trucks along other things that need to be maintained. Think of all the people and teamwork, it took for all the roads to be made. Then think about all the teamwork it took to make all the gas stations, truck stops or rest areas so the driver or drivers can get an appropriate amount of rest. Then maybe we need to think about the warehouses that were used to store this planner in before it got to the Walmart that I bought it in. And all that built those and their homes and their tools and such.

In just making and shipping this one planner, we have just shown that it takes a team from all over the world just to get this one planner to me. We can know that this works with just about anything any person owns. There are some kinds of foreign parts being used in a lot of things that people use today. And that is just one small example of why we are told to give thanks in all things.

> In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you. (1 Thessalonians 5:18)

But now let us think about how all of these servants and or vessels of God must eat daily. Let us think about all the farmers in the world. Yes, they too must have houses to live in. They too must have some form of transportation. They too must eat, so just think of all the parts that they must use in whatever they have too just live. But then also think about the foreign components in their tractors, combines, and all different plows and such that they pull behind them just to bring their crop and or livestock to the market. And that is why we are told to eat and then give thanks.

> When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the Lord thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. (Deuteronomy 8:10)

I don't care what it is you own or what you are putting in your mouth, in some way or another, it took teamwork from all over the world just so you could have whatever it is. I will guarantee that it took at least a handful of components made from a different country one way or another to bring that product to your convenience. And all this happened because our perfect, longsuffering, patient, forgiving, understanding Father breathed life into you and everyone else on this planet. As you can see and hear now, we all need each other. There is no I in this, it is worldwide teamwork. Now it is time for you to decide which team do you want to be on.

> The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Peter 3::9)